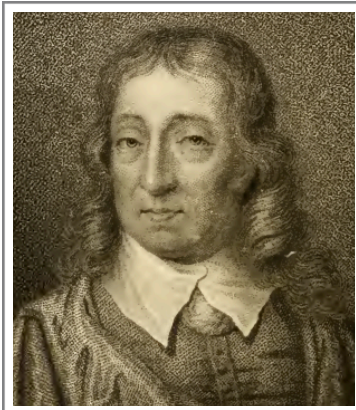


The Poetical Works of John Milton,
ed. H. J. Todd, vol 1 (1809)



MILTON

PARADISE LOST

WITH
PREVIEWS

2ND EDITION (1674)

IN TWELVE BOOKS

&

PARADISE REGAINED

WITH
PREVIEWS



.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

INTERLEAVABLE



3.0

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

This **UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE LAYOUT** of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

The **RESTRICTED INTERLEAVED LAYOUT** of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT requires a license available only at [SEAHANDPRESS.COM](https://seahandpress.com) (LINK).



This edition is a companion to the Second Edition of *Paradise Lost* (in twelve books) printed by S. Simmon (1674) and to the First Edition of *Paradise Regained* (1671).

In *Paradise Lost*, **F#^** identifies the line printed atop page # of the First Edition (1667) (the First Edition does not number pages; following the convention of the Second Edition, page 1 has line 1.1) and **S#^** the line atop page # of the Second Edition (1674).

In *Paradise Regained*, **F#^** identifies the line atop page # of the First Edition (1671).

^# (in *Paradise Regained* **^v#**) identifies the total line count from 1.1 of *Paradise Lost* to the end of *Paradise Regained*; **^^#** from the end of *Paradise Regained* to 1.1 of *Paradise Lost*; **^#** from the end of *Paradise Lost* to 1.1 of *Paradise Regained*.

To interleave Book 3 of *Paradise Lost*, print pages 25 to 32 of the “interleavable layout” version (the print range appears bottom left on title page of each Book), double-sided in color with long edge binding. Carefully fold each sheet in half lengthwise with the face marked **L#[I]** inside the fold. Separately interleave **L** (leaves, or sheets of paper) of the same letter (**L** marked **A** separately, **L** marked **B** separately, **L** marked **C** separately) in numeric order (e.g., **L1 A** below **L2 A** below **L3 A**, with the each **L#[I]** facing up), then place interleaved **A** before interleaved **B** before interleaved **C** and the lines of Book 3 will run in numeric order.

Please refer to the “as if interleaved” PDF if you prefer not to print, fold and interleave. The RESTRICTED INTERLEAVED LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT requires a license available only at SEAHANDPRESS.COM (LINK).

Milton His legions — Angel Forms, who lay entranced
 Paradise **Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks**
 F11 **In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades**
 Lost **High over-arched embower; or scattered sedge**
 305 **Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion armed**
Hath vexed the Red-Sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew
Busiris and his Memphian chivalry,
While with perfidious hatred they pursued
The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld
 310 **From the safe shore their floating carcasses**
And broken chariot-wheels. So thick bestrown,
 Abject and lost, lay these, covering the flood,
 Under amazement of their hideous change.
 He called so loud that all the hollow deep
 315 Of Hell resounded: — "Princes, Potentates,
 Warriors, the Flower of Heaven — once yours; now lost,
 If such astonishment as this can seize
 Eternal Spirits! Or have ye chosen this place
 After the toil of battle to repose
 320 S12 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find
 To slumber here, as in the vales of Heaven?
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
 To adore the Conqueror, who now beholds
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood
 325 With scattered arms and ensigns, till anon
 L1[O] His swift pursuers from Heaven-gates discern
 A Th' advantage, and, descending, tread us down
 Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf?
 330 Awake, arise, or be for ever fallen!"
 They heard, and were abashed, and up they sprung
 Upon the wing, **as when men want to watch**
On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,
Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.
 F12 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;
 Yet to their General's voice they soon obeyed
 Innumerable. **As when the potent rod**
Of Amram's son, in Egypt's evil day,
 340 **Waved round the coast, up-called a pitchy cloud**
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung
Like Night, and darkened all the land of Nile;
 So numberless were those bad Angels seen
 345 Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell,
 "Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires;
 Till, as a signal given, th' uplifted spear
 ♦ Of their great Sultan waving to direct
 Their course, in even balance down they light
 1.350 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain:

1

1

1

3

- F#^ top row of page # in Milton's First Edition (in 10 books) printed by Peter Parker (1667). The First Edition does not number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^ top row of page # in Milton's Second Edition (in 12 books) printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 1



EPIC POEM
.ORG
DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 798 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
Book 2

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
3 to 11

OF Man's first disobedience, and the fruit
 Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
 Brought death into the World and all our woe,
 With loss of Eden, till one greater Man
 5 Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,
 Sing, Heavenly Muse, that, on the secret top
 Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
 That shepherd who first taught the chosen seed
 In the beginning how the heavens and earth
 10 Rose out of Chaos: or, if Sion hill
 Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flowed
 Fast by the oracle of God, I thence
 Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,
 S3 That with no middle flight intends to soar
 F2 15 Above th' Aonian mount, while it pursues
 Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.
 And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer
 Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,
 Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first
 20 Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread,
 Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyss,
 And mad'st it pregnant. What in me is dark
 Illumine, what is low raise and support;
 That, to the height of this great argument,
 25 I may assert Eternal Providence,
 L1[I] @ And justify the ways of God to men.
 A Say first — for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,
 Nor the deep tract of Hell — say first what cause
 Moved our grand parents, in that happy state,
 30 Favoured of Heaven so highly, to fall off
 From their Creator, and transgress his will
 For one restraint, lords of the World besides;
 Who first seduced them to that foul revolt?
 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was whose guile,
 35 Stirred up with envy and revenge, deceived
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride
 Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host
 Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring
 To set himself in glory above his peers,
 40 He trusted to have equalled the Most High,
 If he opposed, and with ambitious aim
 Against the throne and monarchy of God,
 Raised impious war in Heaven and battle proud,
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
 45 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,
 Milton With hideous ruin and combustion, down
 Paradise F3 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
 S4 ♦ In adamant chains and penal fire,
 Lost Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.
 1.50 Nine times the space that measures day and night

2 (1C) Infernal world! and thou, profoundest Hell,
 Receive thy new possessor — one who brings S10
 A mind not to be changed by place or time.
 The mind is its own place, and in itself @
 Can make a Heaven of Hell, a Hell of Heaven. 255
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be, all but less than he
 Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least
 We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence; 260
 Here we may reign secure; and, in my choice,
 To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell:
 Better to reign in Hell than serve in Heaven. @
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 Th' associates and co-partners of our loss, 265
 Lie thus astonished on th' oblivious pool,
 And call them not to share with us their part
 In this unhappy mansion, or once more
 With rallied arms to try what may be yet
 Regained in Heaven, or what more lost in Hell?" 270
 So Satan spake; and him Beelzebub F10
 Thus answered: — "Leader of those armies bright
 Which, but th' Omnipotent, none could have foiled!
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge
 Of hope in fears and dangers — heard so oft 275
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge L1[I]
 Of battle, when it raged, in all assaults A
 Their surest signal — they will soon resume
 New courage and revive, though now they lie
 Grovelling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280
 As we erewhile, astounded and amazed;
 2 (1C) No wonder, fallen such a pernicious height!"
 He scare had ceased when the superior Fiend
 Was moving toward the shore; his ponderous shield,
 Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round, 285
 Behind him cast. The broad circumference S11
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
 Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views
 At evening, from the top of Fesole,
 Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290
 Rivers, or mountains, in her spotty globe.
 His spear — to equal which the tallest pine
 Hewn on Norwegian hills, to be the mast
 Of some great ammiral, were but a wand —
 295 He walked with, to support uneasy steps
 Over the burning marl, not like those steps Milton
 On Heaven's azure; and the torrid clime Paradise
 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire. Lost
 Nathless he so endured, till on the beach
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and called 1.300

	Leviathan, which God of all his works	3 (2C)	To mortal men, he, with his horrid crew,	
Milton	Created hugest that swim th' ocean-stream.		Lay vanquished, rolling in the fiery gulf,	Milton
Paradise	Him, haply slumbering on the Norway foam,		Confounded, though immortal. But his doom	Paradise
Lost	The pilot of some small night-foundered skiff,		Reserved him to more wrath; for now the thought	Lost
205	Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell,		Both of lost happiness and lasting pain	55
	With fixed anchor in his scaly rind,		Torments him: round he throws his baleful eyes,	
F8	Moors by his side under the lee, while night		That witnessed huge affliction and dismay,	
	Invests the sea, and wished morn delays.		Mixed with obdurate pride and steadfast hate.	
	So stretched out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay,		At once, as far as Angels ken, he views	
210	Chained on the burning lake; nor ever thence		The dismal situation waste and wild.	60
	Had risen, or heaved his head, but that the will		A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,	
	And high permission of all-ruling Heaven		As one great furnace flamed; yet from those flames	
	Left him at large to his own dark designs,		No light; but rather darkness visible	
	That with reiterated crimes he might		Served only to discover sights of woe,	
215	Heap on himself damnation, while he sought		Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace	65
	Evil to others, and enraged might see		And rest can never dwell, hope never comes	
	How all his malice served but to bring forth		That comes to all, but torture without end	
S9	Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shewn		Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed	
	On Man by him seduced, but on himself		With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed.	
220	Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance poured.		Such place Eternal Justice has prepared	70
	Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool		For those rebellious; here their prison ordained	
	His mighty stature; on each hand the flames		In utter darkness, and their portion set,	
	Driven backward slope their pointing spires, and, rolled		As far removed from God and light of Heaven	
	In billows, leave i' th' midst a horrid vale.		As from the centre thrice to th' utmost pole.	
225	Then with expanded wings he steers his flight		Oh how unlike the place from whence they fell!	75
L2[O]	Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,		There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelmed	L2[O]
A	That felt unusual weight; till on dry land		With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,	A
	He lights — if it were land that ever burned		He soon discerns; and, weltering by his side,	
	With solid, as the lake with liquid fire,		One next himself in power, and next in crime,	F4
230	And such appeared in hue as when the force		Long after known in Palestine, and named	80
	Of subterranean wind transprots a hill		Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,	
	Torn from Pelorus, or the shattered side	3 (2C)	And thence in Heaven called Satan, with bold words	S5
	Of thundering Etna, whose combustible		Breaking the horrid silence, thus began:	
	And fuelled entrails, thence conceiving fire,		"If thou beest he, — but O how fallen! how changed	
235	Sublimed with mineral fury, aid the winds,		From him who, in the happy realms of light	85
	And leave a singed bottom all involved		Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine	
	With stench and smoke. Such resting found the sole		Myriads, though bright! — if he, whom mutual league,	
	Of unblest feet. Him followed his next mate;		United thoughts and counsels, equal hope	
F9	Both glorying to have scaped the Stygian flood	3	And hazard in the glorious enterprise	
240	As gods, and by their own recovered strength,		Joined with me once, now misery hath joined	90
	Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.		In equal ruin . . . into what pit thou seest	
	"Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,"		From what height fallen, so much the stronger proved	
	Said then the lost Archangel, "this the seat		He with his thunder; and till then who knew	
	That we must change for Heaven? — this mournful gloom		The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,	
245	For that celestial light? Be it so, since he		Nor what the potent Victor in his rage	95
	Who now is sovereign can dispose and bid		Can else inflict, do I repent, or change,	
	What shall be right: farthest from him is best		Though changed in outward lustre, that fixed mind,	
♦	Whom reason hath equalled, force hath made supreme		And high disdain from sense of injured merit,	
	Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,		That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,	
1.250	Where joy for ever dwells! Hail, horrors! hail,	5	And to the fierce contentions brought along	1.100

Innumerable force of Spirits armed,
 That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,
 His utmost power with adverse power opposed
 In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,
 105 And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?
 @ All is not lost — the unconquerable will,
 And study of revenge, immortal hate,
 And courage never to submit or yield:
 And what is else not to be overcome?
 110 That glory never shall his wrath or might
 F5 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
 With suppliant knee, and deify his power
 Who, from the terror of this arm, so late
 Doubted his empire, — that were low indeed;
 115 That were an ignominy and shame beneath
 S6 This downfall; since, by fate, the strength of Gods,
 And this empyreal sybstance cannot fail;
 Since, through experience of this great event,
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanced,
 120 We may with more successful hope resolve
 To wage by force or guile eternal war,
 Irreconcilable to our grand Foe,
 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy
 Sole reigning holds the tyranny of Heaven.”
 125 So spake th' apostate Angel, though in pain,
 L2[I] Vaunting aloud, but racked with deep despair;
 A And him thus answered soon his bold compeer:
 “O Prince, O Chief of many throned Powers
 That led th' embattled Seraphim to war
 130 Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds
 Fearless, endangered Heaven's perpetual King,
 And put to proof his high supremacy,
 Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate;
 Too well I see and rue the dire event
 135 That, with sad overthrow and foul defeat,
 Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
 As far as Gods and heavenly Essences
 Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains
 140 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,
 Though all our glory extinct, and happy state
 Here swallowed up in endless misery.
 F6 But what if he our Conqueror (whom I now
 Of force believe almighty, since no less
 145 Than such could have o'erpowered such force as ours)
 Milton Have left us this our spirit and strength entire,
 Paradise Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
 Lost ♦ That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls
 1.150 S7 By right of war, whate'er his business be,

4 (3C)

4 (3C)

4

6

Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,
 Or do his errands in the gloomy Deep?
 What can it then avail though yet we feel
 Strength undiminished, or eternal being
 To undergo eternal punishment?” 155
 Where to with speedy words th' Arch-Fiend replied:
 “Fallen Cherub, to be weak is miserable,
 Doing or suffering: but of this be sure —
 To do aught good never will be our task,
 But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160
 As being the contrary to his high will
 Whom we resist. If then his providence
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,
 And out of good still to find means of evil; 165
 Which oft-times may succeed so as perhaps
 Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb
 His inmost counsels from their destined aim.
 But see! the angry Victor hath recalled
 His ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170
 Back to the gates of Heaven: the sulphurous hail,
 Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid
 The fiery surge that from the precipice
 Of Heaven received us falling; and the thunder,
 Winged with red lightning and impetuous rage, F7
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now L2[I]
 To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep. A
 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn
 Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe.
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild, 180
 The seat of desolation, void of light,
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves; S8
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there; 185
 And, re-assembling our afflicted powers,
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
 Our enemy, our own loss how repair,
 How overcome this dire calamity,
 What reinforcement we may gain from hope, 190
 If not, what resolution from despair.’
 Thus Satan, talking to his nearest mate,
 With head uplift above the wave, and eyes
 That sparkling blazed; his other parts besides
 Prone on the flood, extended long and large, 195
 Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge
 Milton As whom the fables name of monstrous size, Paradise
 Titanian or Earth-born, that warred on Jove, Lost
 Briareos or Typhon, whom the den
 By ancient Tarsus held, or that sea-beast 2.200

	That underneath had veins of liquid fire	5 (4C)	A multitude like which the populous North	
Milton	Sluiced from the lake, a second multitude		Poured never from her frozen loins to pass	Milton
Paradise	With wondrous art founded the massy ore,		Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous sons	Paradise
Lost	Severing each kind, and scummed the bullion-dross.		Came like a deluge on the South, and spread	S13 Lost
705	A third as soon had formed within the ground		Beneath Gibraltar to the Libyan sands.	355
	A various mould, and from the boiling cells		Forthwith, form every squadron and each band,	
	By strange conveyance filled each hollow nook;		The heads and leaders thither haste where stood	
	As in an organ, from one blast of wind,		Their great Commander — godlike Shapes, and Forms	
	To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.		Excelling human; princely Dignities;	
710	Anon out of the earth a fabric huge		And Powers that erst in Heaven sat on thrones,	360
	Rose like an exhalation, with the sound		Though on their names in Heavenly records now	
	Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet —		Be no memorial, blotted out and razed	
	Built like a temple, where pilasters round		By their rebellion from the Books of Life.	
	Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid		Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve	
715	With golden architrave; nor did there want		Got them new names, till, wandering o'er the earth,	365
	Cornice or frieze, with bossy sculptures graven;		Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,	
	The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon		By falsities and lies the greatest part	F13
	Nor great Alcairo such magnificence		Of mankind they corrupted to forsake	
F24	Equalled in all their glories, to enshrine		God their Creator, and th' invisible	
720	Belus or Serapis their gods, or seat		Glory of him that made them to transform	370
	Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove		Oft to the image of a brute, adorned	
	In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile		With gay religions full of pomp and gold,	
	Stood fixed her stately height, and straight the doors,		And devils to adore for deities.	
	Opening their brazen folds, discover, wide		Then were they known to men by various names,	
725	Within, her ample spaces o'er the smooth		And various idols through the heathen world.	375
L1[O]	And level pavement: from the arched roof,		Say, Muse, their names then known, who first, who last,	L1[O]
B	Pendent by subtle magic, many a row		Roused from the slumber on that fiery couch,	B
S24	Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, fed		At their great Emperor's call, as next in worth	
	With naptha and asphaltus, yielded light		Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,	
730	As from a sky. The hasty multitude		While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof?	380
	Admiring entered; and the work some praise,		The chief were those who, from the pit of Hell	
	And some the architect. His hand was known	5 (4C)	Roaming to seek their prey on Earth, durst fix	
	In Heaven by many a towered structure high,		Their seats, long after, next the seat of God,	
	Where sceptred Angels held their residence,		Their altars by his altar, gods adored	
735	And sat as Princes, whom the supreme King		Among the nations round, and durst abide	385
	Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,		Jehovah thundering out of Sion, throned	
	Each in his Hierarchy, the Orders bright.		Between the Cherubim; yea, often placed	
	Nor was his name unheard or unadored		Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,	S14
	In ancient Greece; and in Ausonian land	5	Abominations; and with cursed things	
740	Men called him Mulciber; and how he fell		His holy rites and solemn feasts profaned,	390
	From Heaven they fabled, thrown by angry Jove		And with their darkness durst affront his light.	
	Sheer o'er the crystal battlements: from morn		First, Moloch, horrid king, besmeared with blood	
	To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,		Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears;	
	A summer's day, and with the setting sun		Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud,	
745	Dropt from the zenith, like a falling star,		Their children's cries unheard that passed through fire	395
	On Lemnos, th' Aegaeon isle. Thus they relate,		To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite	
	Erring; for he with this rebellious rout		Worshiped in Rabba and her watery plain,	
♦	Fell long before; nor aught availed him now		In Argob and in Basan, to the stream	
	To have built in Heaven high towers; nor did he 'scape		Of utmost Arnon. Nor content with such	F14
1.750	By all his engines, but was headlong sent,	7	Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart	1.400

Of Solomon he led by fraud to build
 His temple right against the temple of God
 On that opprobrious hill, and made his grove
 The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence
 405 And black Gehenna called, the type of Hell.
 Next Chemos, th' obscene dread of Moab's sons,
 From Aroar to Nebo and the wild
 Of southmost Abarim; in Hesebon
 And Horonaim, Seon's realm, beyond
 410 The flowery dale of Sibma clad with vines,
 And Eleale to th' Asphaltic Pool:
 Peor his other name, when he enticed
 Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 415 Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged
 Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove
 Of Moloch homicide, lust hard by hate,
 Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.
 With these came they who, from the bordering flood
 420 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
 S15 Of Baalim and Ashtaroth — those male,
 These feminine. For Spirits, when they please,
 Can either sex assume, or both; so soft
 425 And uncompounded is their essence pure,
 L1[I] Not tried or manacled with joint or limb,
 B Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh; but, in what shape they choose,
 Dilated or condensed, bright or obscure,
 430 Can execute their airy purposes,
 F15 And works of love or enmity fulfil.
 For those the race of Israel oft forsook
 Their Living Strength, and unfrequented left
 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
 435 To bestial gods; for which their heads as low
 Bowed down in battle, sunk before the spear
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop
 Came Astoreth, whom the Phoenicians called
 Astarte, queen of heaven, with crescent horns;
 440 To whose bright image nightly by the moon
 Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs;
 In Sion also not unsung, where stood
 Her temple on th' offensive mountain, built
 By that uxorious king whose heart, though large,
 445 Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell
 Milton To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,
 Paradise Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured
 Lost ♦ The Syrian damsels to lament his fate
 In amorous ditties all a summer's day,
 1.450 While smooth Adonis from his native rock

6 (5C)

6 (5C)

6

8

There went a fame in Heaven that he ere long
 Intended to create, and therein plant
 A generation whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven.
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps F22
 Our first eruption — thither, or elsewhere;
 For this infernal pit shall never hold
 Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor th' Abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts
 Full counsel must mature. Peace is despaired; S22 660
 For who can think submission? War, then, war
 Open or understood, must be resolved.”
 He spake; and, to confirm his words, outflow
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
 Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze 665
 Far round illumined Hell. Highly they raged
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms
 Clashed on their sounding shields the din of war,
 Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heaven.
 There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top 670
 Belched fire and rolling smoke; the rest entire
 Shone with a glossy scurf — undoubted sign
 That in his womb was hid metallic ore,
 The work of sulphur. Thither, winged with speed,
 A numerous brigade hastened: as when bands 675
 Of pioneers, with spade and pickaxe armed, L1[I]
 Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field, B
 Or cast a rampart. Mammon led them on —
 Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell
 From Heaven; for even in Heaven his looks and thoughts 680
 Were always downward bent, admiring more
 The riches of heaven's pavement, trodden gold,
 Than aught divine or holy else enjoyed
 In vision beatific. By him first
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught, 685
 Ransacked the centre, and with impious hands
 Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth F23
 For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
 Opened into the hill a spacious wound,
 And digged out ribs of gold. Let none admire 690
 That riches grow in Hell; that soil may best
 Deserve the precious bane. And here let those
 Who boast in mortal things, and wondering tell
 Of Babel, and the works of Memphian kings, S23
 Learn how their greatest monuments of fame 695
 And strength and art are easily outdone Milton
 By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour Paradise
 What in an age they, with incessant toil Lost
 And hands innumerable, scarce perform.
 Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepared, 1.700

Deep scars of thunder had intrenched, and care
Milton Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows
Paradise Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride
Lost Waiting revenge. Cruel his eye, but cast
 605 Signs of remorse and passion, to behold
 The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
 (Far other once beheld in bliss), condemned
 For ever now to have their lot in pain —
 Millions of Spirits for his fault amerced
 610 Of Heaven, and from eternal splendours flung
 For his revolt — yet faithful how they stood,
 Their glory withered; **as, when heaven's fire**
Hath scathed the forest oaks or mountain pines,
With singed top their stately growth, though bare,
 615 **Stands on the blasted heath.** He now prepared
 To speak; whereat their doubled ranks they bend
 From wing to wing, and half enclose him round
 With all his peers: attention held them mute.
 Thrice he assayed, and thrice, in spite of scorn,
 620 Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last
 Words interwove with sighs found out their way:
 “O myriads of immortal Spirits! O Powers
F21 Matchless, but with th' Almighty! — and that strife
 Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
 625 As this place testifies, and this dire change,
L2[O] S21 Hateful to utter. But what power of mind,
B Forseeing or presaging, from the depth
 Of knowledge past or present, could have feared
 How such united force of gods, how such
 630 As stood like these, could ever know repulse?
 For who can yet believe, though after loss,
 That all these puissant legions, whose exile
 Hath emptied Heaven, shall fail to re-ascend,
 Self-raised, and repossess their native seat?
 635 For me, be witness all the host of Heaven,
^^12K If counsels different, or danger shunned
 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns
 Monarch in Heaven till then as one secure
 Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,
 640 Consent or custom, and his regal state
 Put forth at full, but still his strength concealed —
 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own,
 So as not either to provoke, or dread
 645 New war provoked; our better part remains
 To work in close design, by fraud or guile,
 What force effected not; that he no less
♦ At length from us may find, who overcomes
 By force hath overcome but half his foe.
 1.650 Space may produce new Worlds; whereof so rife

7 (6C)

7 (6C)

7

9

Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the love-tale
Milton Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,
Paradise Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch
Lost Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led,
 455 His eye surveyed the dark idolatries
S16 Of alienated Judah. Next came one
 Who mourned in earnest, when the captive ark
 Maimed his brute image, head and hands lopt off,
 In his own temple, on the grunsel-edge,
 460 Where he fell flat and shamed his worshippers:
 Dagon his name, sea-monster, upward man
 And downward fish; yet had his temple high
F16 Reared in Azotus, dreaded through the coast
 Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon,
 465 And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.
 Him followed Rimmon, whose delightful seat
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks
 Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.
 He also against the house of God was bold:
 470 A leper once he lost, and gained a king —
 Ahaz, his sottish conqueror, whom he drew
 God's altar to disparage and displace
 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
 His odious offerings, and adore the gods
 475 Whom he had vanquished. After these appeared
L2[O] A crew who, under names of old renown —
B Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train —
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abused
 Fanatic Egypt and her priests to seek
 480 Their wandering gods disguised in brutish forms
 Rather than human. Nor did Israel 'scape
 Th' infection, when their borrowed gold composed
 The calf in Oreb; and the rebel king
 Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan,
 485 Likening his Maker to the grazed ox —
 Jehovah, who, in one night, when he passed
 From Egypt marching, equalled with one stroke
 Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.
 Belial came last; than whom a Spirit more lewd
S17 490 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for itself. To him no temple stood
 Or altar smoked; yet who more oft than he
 In temples and at altars, when the priest
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who filled
F17 With lust and violence the house of God?
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,
 And injury and outrage; and, when night

1.500

Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.
 Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night
 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door
 505 Exposed a matron, to avoid worse rape.
 These were the prime in order and in might:
 The rest were long to tell; though far renowned
 Th' Ionian gods — of Javan's issue held
 Gods, yet confessed later than Heaven and Earth,
 510 Their boasted parents; — Titan, Heaven's first-born,
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seized
 By younger Saturn: he from mightier Jove,
 His own and Rhea's son, like measure found;
 So Jove usurping reigned. These, first in Crete
 515 And Ida known, thence on the snowy top
 Of cold Olympus ruled the middle air,
 Their highest heaven; or on the Delphian cliff,
 Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds
 Of Doric land; or who with Saturn old
 520 Fled over Adria to th' Hesperian fields,
 And o'er the Celtic roamed the utmost Isles.
 All these and more came flocking; but with looks
 Downcast and damp; yet such wherein appeared
 S18 Obscure some glimpse of joy to have found their Chief
 525 Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost
 L2[I] In loss itself; which on his countenance cast
 B F18 Like doubtful hue. But he, his wonted pride
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently raised
 530 Their fainting courage, and dispelled their fears.
 Then straight commands that, at the warlike sound
 Of trumpets loud and clarions, be upreared
 His mighty standard. That proud honour claimed
 Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall:
 535 Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurled
 Th' imperial ensign, which, full high advanced,
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,
 With gems and golden lustre rich emblazed,
 Seraphic arms and trophies; all the while
 540 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds:
 At which the universal host up-sent
 A shout that tore Hell's concave, and beyond
 Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen
 545 Ten thousand banners rise into the air,
 Milton With orient colours waving; with them rose
 Paradise A forest huge of spears; and thronging helms
 Lost ♦ Appeared, and serried shields in thick array
 Of depth immeasurable. Anon they move
 1.550 In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood

8 (7C)

8 (7C)

8

10

Of flutes and soft recorders — such as raised
 To height of noblest temper heroes old
 Arming to battle, and instead of rage
 Deliberate valour breathed, firm, and unmoved
 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat; 555
 Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage
 With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase
 Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain S19
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they, F19
 Breathing united force with fixed thought, 560
 Moved on in silence to soft pipes that charmed
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil. And now
 Advanced in view they stand — a horrid front
 Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise
 Of warriors old, with ordered spear and shield, 565
 Awaiting what command their mighty Chief ^10K
 Had to impose. He through the armed files
 Darts his experienced eye, and soon traverse
 The whole battalion views — their order due,
 Their visages and stature as of gods; 570
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart
 Distends with pride, and, hardening in his strength,
 Glories; for never, since created Man,
 Met such embodied force as, named with these,
 Could merit more than that small infantry 575
 Warred on by cranes — though all the giant brood L2[I]
 Of Phlegra with th' heroic race were joined B
 That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side
 Mixed with auxiliar gods; and what resounds
 In fable or romance of Uther's son, 580
 Begirt with British and Armoric knights;
 And all who since, baptized or infidel,
 Jousted in Aspramont, or Montalban,
 Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisonde,
 Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore 585
 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell
 By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observed
 Their dread Commander. He, above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent, 590
 Stood like a tower. His form had yet not lost F20
 All her original brightness, nor appeared S20
 Less than Archangel ruined, and th' excess
 Of glory obscured: as when the sun new-risen
 Looks through the horizontal misty air 595
 Shorn of his beams, or, from behind the moon, Milton
 In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds Paradise
 On half the nations, and with fear of change Lost
 Perplexes monarchs: darkened so, yet shone
 Above them all th' Archangel: but his face 1.600

And with perpetual inroads to alarm,
Milton Though inaccessible, his fatal throne:
Paradise ♦ Which, if not victory, is yet revenge.”
Lost He ended frowning, and his look denounced
Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous
To less than gods. On th’ other side up rose
Belial, in act more graceful and humane.
110 A fairer person lost not Heaven; he seemed
For dignity composed, and high exploit.
But all was false and hollow; though his tongue
Dropped manna, and could make the worse appear
F31 The better reason, to perplex and dash
115 Maturest counsels — for his thoughts were low;
To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds
Timorous and slothful. Yet he pleased the ear,
And with persuasive accent thus began:
“I should be much for open war, O Peers,
120 As not behind in hate, if what was urged
Main reason to persuade immediate war
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
Ominous conjecture on the whole success;
When he who most excels in fact of arms,
125 In what he counsels and in what excels
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
And utter dissolution, as the scope
L1[O] Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
C First, what revenge? The towers of Heaven are filled
130 With armed watch, that render all access
Impregnable: oft on the bordering Deep
Encamped their legions, or with obscure wing
Scout far and wide into the realm of Night,
Scorning surprise. Or, could we break our way
S32 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise
With blackest insurrection to confound
Heaven’s purest light, yet our great Enemy,
All incorruptible, would on his throne
Sit unpolluted, and th’ ethereal mould,
140 Incapable of stain, would soon expel
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,
Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope
Is flat despair: we must exasperate
Th’ Almighty Victor to spend all his rage;
145 And that must end us; that must be our cure —
F32 To be no more. Sad cure! for who would lose,
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
Those thoughts that wander through eternity,
To perish rather, swallowed up and lost
2.150 In the wide womb of uncreated Night,
Devoid of sense and motion? And who knows,
2.152 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
Can give it, or will ever? How he can

9 With his industrious crew, to build in Hell. **F25**
Meanwhile the winged Heralds, by command **Milton**
Of sovereign power, with awful ceremony **Paradise**
And trumpet’s sound, throughout the host proclaim **Lost**
A solemn council forthwith to be held 755
At Pandemonium, the high capital
Of Satan and his peers. Their summons called
From every band and squared regiment
By place or choice the worthiest: they anon
With hundreds and with thousands trooping came 760
Attended. All access was thronged; the gates
And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall
(Though **like a covered field, where champions bold**
Wont ride in armed, and at the Soldan’s chair
Defied the best of Paynim chivalry 765
To mortal combat, or career with lance),
Thick swarmed, both on the ground and in the air,
Brushed with the hiss of rustling wings. **As bees**
In spring-time, when the Sun with Taurus rides,
Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 770
In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers
Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,
The suburb of their straw-built citadel,
New rubbed with balm, expatiate, and confer
Their state-affairs: so thick the airy crowd 775
Swarmed and were straitened; till, the signal given, **L1[O]**
Behold a wonder! They but now who seemed **C**
In bigness to surpass Earth’s giant sons,
Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room
Throng numberless — **like that pygmean race** 780
Beyond the Indian mount; or faery elves,
Whose midnight revels, by a forest-side
Or fountain, some belated peasant sees, **F26**
Or dreams he sees, while overhead the Moon
Sits arbitress, and nearer to the Earth 785
Wheels her pale course: they, on their mirth and dance
Intent, with jocund music charm his ear;
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.
9 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
Reduced their shapes immense, and were at large, 790
Though without number still, amidst the hall
Of that infernal court. But far within,
And in their own dimensions like themselves,
The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim
In close recess and secret conclave sat, **S26**
A thousand demi-gods on golden seats,
Frequent and full. After short silence then,
And summons read, the great consult began. 1.798
HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far **S28** 2.1
Outshone the wealth or Ormuz and of Ind, **F27** 2.2

5	♦	Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand Showers on her kings barbaric pearl and gold, Satan exalted sat, by merit raised To that bad eminence; and, from despair Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue Vain war with Heaven; and, by success untaught, He proud imaginations thus displayed: — “Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven! — For, since no deep within her gulf can hold Immortal vigour, though oppressed and fallen, I give not Heaven for lost: from this descent Celestial Virtues rising will appear More glorious and more dread than from no fall, And trust themselves to fear no second fate! — Me though just right, and the fixed laws of Heaven, Did first create your leader — next, free choice With what besides in council or in fight Hath been achieved of merit — yet this loss, Thus far at least recovered, hath much more Established in a safe, unenvied throne, Yielded with full consent. The happier state In Heaven, which follows dignity, might draw Envy from each inferior; but who here Will envy whom the highest place exposes Foremost to stand against the Thunderer’s aim Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share Of endless pain? Where there is, then, no good For which to strive, no strife can grow up there From faction: for none sure will claim in Hell Precedence; none whose portion is so small Of present pain that with ambitious mind Will covet more! With this advantage, then, To union, and firm faith, and firm accord, More than can be in Heaven, we now return To claim our just inheritance of old, Surer to prosper than prosperity Could have assured us; and by what best way, Whether of open war or covert guile, We now debate. Who can advise may speak.” He ceased; and next him Moloch, sceptred king, Stood up — the strongest and the fiercest Spirit That fought in Heaven, now fiercer by despair. His trust was with th’ Eternal to be deemed Equal in strength, and rather than be less Cared not to be at all; with that care lost Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse, He recked not, and these words thereafter spake: — “My sentence is for open war. Of wiles, More unexpert, I boast not; them let those	Contrive who need, or when they need; not now. For, while they sit contriving, shall the rest — Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait The signal to ascend, sit lingering here, Heaven’s fugitives, and for their dwelling-place Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame, The prison of his tyranny who reigns By our delay? No! let us rather choose, Armed with Hell-flames and fury, all at once O’er Heaven’s high towers to force resistless way, Turning our tortures into horrid arms Against the Torturer; when, to meet the noise Of his almighty engine, he shall hear Infernal thunder, and, for lightning, see Black fire and horror shot with equal rage Among his Angels, and his throne itself Mixed with Tartarean sulphur and strange fire, His own invented torments. But perhaps The way seems difficult, and steep to scale With upright wing against a higher foe — Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench Of that forgetful lake benumb not still, That in our proper motion we ascend Up to our native seat; descent and fall To us is adverse. Who but felt of late, When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear Insulting, and pursued us through the Deep, With what compulsion and laborious flight We sunk thus low? Th’ ascent is easy, then; Th’ event is feared! Should we again provoke Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find To our destruction, if there be in Hell Fear to be worse destroyed! What can be worse Than to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemned In this abhorred deep to utter woe! Where pain of unextinguishable fire Must exercise us without hope of end The vassals of his anger, when the scourge Inexorably, and the torturing hour, Calls us to penance? More destroyed than thus, We should be quite abolished, and expire. What fear we then? what doubt we to incense His utmost ire? which, to the height enraged, Will either quite consume us, and reduce To nothing this essential — happier far Than miserable to have eternal being! — Or, if our substance be indeed divine, And cannot cease to be, we are at worst On this side nothing; and by proof we feel Our power sufficient to disturb his Heaven,	55 60 65 S30 70 75 L1[I] C 80 F30 85 90 95 Milton Paradise Lost 2.100 S31 2.102
10				
15				
F28				
20				
25				
L1[I]				
C				
30				
S29				
35				
40				
45				
Milton				
Paradise				
Lost				
2.50	F29			
2.52				

Among themselves, and levy cruel wars
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy:
 As if (which might induce us to accord)
 Man had not hellish foes enow besides,
 505 ♦ That day and night for his destruction wait!
 The Stygian council thus dissolved; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal Peers:
 Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seemed
 S43 Alone th' antagonist of Heaven, nor less
 510 Than Hell's dread Emperor, with pomp supreme,
 And god-like imitated state: him round
 A globe of fiery Seraphim enclosed
 With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.
 Then of their session ended they bid cry
 515 With trumpet's regal sound the great result:
 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim
 Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,
 By herald's voice explained; the hollow Abyss
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell
 520 With deafening shout returned them loud acclaim.
 Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat raised
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Powers
 Disband; and, wandering, each his several way
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
 525 Leads him perplexed, where he may likeliest find
 L1[O] Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
 A The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,
 Upon the wing or in swift race contend,
 530 F44 As at th' Olympian games or Pythian fields;
 Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal
 With rapid wheels, or fronted brigades form:
 As when, to warn proud cities, war appears
 Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush
 535 To battle in the clouds; before each van
 Prick forth the airy knights, and couch their spears,
 Till thickest legions close; with feats of arms
 From either end of heaven the welkin burns.
 Others, with vast Typhoean rage, more fell,
 540 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air
 In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar:
 As when Alcides, from Oecechalia crowned
 S44 With conquest, felt th' envenomed robe, and tore
 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,
 545 And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw
 Into th' Euboic sea. Others, more mild,
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing
 With notes angelical to many a harp
 Their own heroic deeds, and hapless fall
 2.550 By doom of battle, and complain that Fate

10

- F#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 First Edition (in 10 books)
 printed by Peter Parker (1667).
 The First Edition does not
 number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
 S#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 Second Edition (in 12 books)
 printed by S. Simmon (1674)
 ♦ same row as last line
 of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 2



EPIC POEM
.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
 copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 1055 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
Book 3

A 2L 1 - 550
 B 3L 551 - 1055

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
 2-SIDED:
 13 to 24

13

S28 F27 HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far
 Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand
 Showers on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,
 5 ♦ Satan exalted sat, by merit raised
 To that bad eminence; and, from despair
 Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
 Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
 Vain war with Heaven; and, by success untaught,
 10 He proud imaginations thus displayed: —
 “Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven! —
 For, since no deep within her gulf can hold
 Immortal vigour, though oppressed and fallen,
 I give not Heaven for lost: from this descent
 15 Celestial Virtues rising will appear
 More glorious and more dread than from no fall,
 And trust themselves to fear no second fate! —
 F28 Me though just right, and the fixed laws of Heaven,
 Did first create your leader — next, free choice
 20 With what besides in council or in fight
 Hath been achieved of merit — yet this loss,
 Thus far at least recovered, hath much more
 Established in a safe, unenvied throne,
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 25 In Heaven, which follows dignity, might draw
 L1[I] Envy from each inferior; but who here
 A Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the Thunderer’s aim
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 30 Of endless pain? Where there is, then, no good
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there
 From faction: for none sure will claim in Hell
 S29 Precedence; none whose portion is so small
 Of present pain that with ambitious mind
 35 Will covet more! With this advantage, then,
 To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,
 More than can be in Heaven, we now return
 To claim our just inheritance of old,
 Surer to prosper than prosperity
 40 Could have assured us; and by what best way,
 Whether of open war or covert guile,
 We now debate. Who can advise may speak.”
 He ceased; and next him Moloch, sceptred king,
 Stood up — the strongest and the fiercest Spirit
 45 That fought in Heaven, now fiercer by despair.
 Milton His trust was with th’ Eternal to be deemed
 Paradise Equal in strength, and rather than be less
 Lost Cared not to be at all; with that care lost
 Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse,
 2.50 F29 He recked not, and these words thereafter spake: —

11 (8C)

2 (1C)

2

14

These royalties, and not refuse to reign,
 Refusing to accept as great a share
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due
 Of hazard more as he above the rest 455
 High honoured sits? Go, therefore, mighty Powers,
 Terror of Heaven, though fallen; intend at home,
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
 The present misery, and render Hell
 More tolerable; if there be cure or charm 460
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill mansion: intermit no watch
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliverance for us all. This enterprise 465
 None shall partake with me.” Thus saying, rose
 F42 The Monarch, and prevented all reply;
 Prudent, lest from his resolution raised,
 Others among the chief might offer now,
 Certain to be refused, what erst they feared; 470
 And, so refused, might in opinion stand
 His rivals, winning cheap the high reputation
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more th’ adventure than his voice
 Forbidding; and at once with him they rose. S42
 Their rising all at once **was as the sound** L1[I]
Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend A
 With awful reverence prone, and as a God
 Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven.
 Nor failed they to express how much they praised 480
 That for the general safety he despised
 His own; for neither do the Spirits damned
 Lose all their virtue, lest bad men should boast
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,
 Or close ambition varnished o’er with zeal. 485
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief:
As, when from mountain-tops the dusky clouds
Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o’erspread
Heaven’s cheerful face, the louring element 490
Scowls o’er the darkened landscape snow or shower,
If chance the radiant sun, with farewell sweet,
Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,
The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings. 495
 O shame to men! Devil with devil damned
 Milton Firm concord holds; men only disagree
 Paradise Of creatures rational, though under hope
 F43 Lost Of heavenly grace, and, God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife 2.500

Milton	To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,	12 (9C)	"My sentence is for open war. Of wiles,	Milton
F40	Shall breathe her balm. But, first, whom shall we send		More unexpert, I boast not; them let those	Paradise
Paradise	In search of this new World? whom shall we find		Contrive who need, or when they need; not now.	Lost
Lost	Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandering feet		For, while they sit contriving, shall the rest —	55
405 ♦	The dark, unbottomed, infinite Abyss,		Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait	
	And through the palpable obscure find out		The signal to ascend, sit lingering here,	
S40	His uncouth way, or spread his airy flight,		Heaven's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place	
	Upborne with indefatigable wings		Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,	
	Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive		The prison of his tyranny who reigns	
410	The happy Isle? What strength, what art, can then		By our delay? No! let us rather choose,	60
	Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe,		Armed with Hell-flames and fury, all at once	
	Through the strict senteries and stations thick		O'er Heaven's high towers to force resistless way,	
	Of Angels watching round? Here he had need		Turning our tortures into horrid arms	
	All circumspection: and we now no less		Against the Torturer; when, to meet the noise	
415	Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send		Of his almighty engine, he shall hear	65
	The weight of all, and our last hope, relies."		Infernal thunder, and, for lightning, see	
	This said, he sat; and expectation held		Black fire and horror shot with equal rage	S30
	His look suspense, awaiting who appeared		Among his Angels, and his throne itself	
	To second, or oppose, or undertake		Mixed with Tartarean sulphur and strange fire,	
420	The perilous attempt. But all sat mute,		His own invented torments. But perhaps	70
	Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each		The way seems difficult, and steep to scale	
	In other's countenance read his own dismay,		With upright wing against a higher foe —	
	Astonished. None among the choice and prime		Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench	
	Of those Heaven-warring champions could be found		Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,	
425	So hardy as to proffer or accept,		That in our proper motion we ascend	75
L2[O]	Alone, the dreadful voyage; till, at last,		Up to our native seat; descent and fall	L2[O]
A	Satan, whom now transcendent glory raised		To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,	A
	Above his fellows, with monarchical pride		When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear	
	Conscious of highest worth, unmoved thus spake:		Insulting, and pursued us through the Deep,	
430	"O Progeny of Heaven! Empyrean Thrones!	3 (2C)	With what compulsion and laborious flight	80
	With reason hath deep silence and demur		We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easy, then;	
	Seized us, though undismayed. Long is the way		Th' event is feared! Should we again provoke	F30
	And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light.		Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find	
F41	Our prison strong, this huge convex of fire,		To our destruction, if there be in Hell	
435	Outrageous to devour, immures us round		Fear to be worse destroyed! What can be worse	85
	Ninefold; and gates of burning adamant,		Than to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemned	
	Barred over us, prohibit all egress.		In this abhorred deep to utter woe!	
	These passed, if any pass, the void profound	3	Where pain of unextinguishable fire	
	Of unessential Night receives him next,		Must exercise us without hope of end	
440	Wide-gaping, and with utter loss of being		The vassals of his anger, when the scourge	90
S41	Threatens him, plunged in that abortive gulf.		Inexorably, and the torturing hour,	
	If thence he scape, into whatever world,		Calls us to penance? More destroyed than thus,	
	Or unknown region, what remains him less		We should be quite abolished, and expire.	
	Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?		What fear we then? what doubt we to incense	
445	But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,		His utmost ire? which, to the height enraged,	95
	And this imperial sovereignty, adorned		Will either quite consume us, and reduce	
	With splendour, armed with power, if aught proposed		To nothing this essential — happier far	
	And judged of public moment in the shape		Than miserable to have eternal being! —	
	Of difficulty or danger, could deter		Or, if our substance be indeed divine,	
2.450	Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume	15	And cannot cease to be, we are at worst	2.100

S31	On this side nothing; and by proof we feel Our power sufficient to disturb his Heaven, And with perpetual inroads to alarm, Though inaccessible, his fatal throne:	13 (10C)	Of him who rules above; so was his will Pronounced among the Gods, and by an oath That shook Heaven's whole circumference confirmed. Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn	
105 ♦	Which, if not victory, is yet revenge.” He ended frowning, and his look denounced Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous To less than gods. On th' other side up rose Belial, in act more graceful and humane.		What creatures there inhabit, of what mould Or substance, how endued, and what their power And where their weakness: how attempted best, By force of subtlety. Though Heaven be shut, And Heaven's high Arbitrator sit secure	355
110	A fairer person lost not Heaven; he seemed For dignity composed, and high exploit. But all was false and hollow; though his tongue Dropped manna, and could make the worse appear		In his own strength, this place may lie exposed, The utmost border of his kingdom, left To their defence who hold it: here, perhaps, Some advantageous act may be achieved By sudden onset — either with Hell-fire	360
F31	The better reason, to perplex and dash		To waste his whole creation, or possess	365
115	Matuarest counsels — for his thoughts were low; To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds Timorous and slothful. Yet he pleased the ear, And with persuasive accent thus began: “I should be much for open war, O Peers,		All as our own, and drive, as we were driven, The puny habitants; or, if not drive, Seduce them to our party, that their God May prove their foe, and with repenting hand Abolish his own works. This would surpass	F39 370
120	As not behind in hate, if what was urged Main reason to persuade immediate war Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast Ominous conjecture on the whole success; When he who most excels in fact of arms,		Common revenge, and interrupt his joy In our confusion, and our joy upraise In his disturbance; when his darling sons, Hurled headlong to partake with us, shall curse	S39
125	In what he counsels and in what excels		Their frail original, and faded bliss —	375
L2[I]	Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair		Faded so soon! Advise if this be worth	L2[I]
A	And utter dissolution, as the scope Of all his aim, after some dire revenge. First, what revenge? The towers of Heaven are filled		Attempting, or to sit in darkness here	A
130	With armed watch, that render all access Impregnable: oft on the bordering Deep Encamped their legions, or with obscure wing Scout far and wide into the realm of Night, Scorning surprise. Or, could we break our way	4 (3C)	Hatching vain empires.” Thus Beelzebub Pleaded his devilish counsel — first devised By Satan, and in part proposed: for whence, But from the author of all ill, could spring	380
S32	By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise With blackest insurrection to confound Heaven's purest light, yet our great Enemy, All incorruptible, would on his throne Sit unpolluted, and th' ethereal mould,	4	So deep a malice, to confound the race Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell To mingle and involve, done all to spite The great Creator? But their spite still serves His glory to augment. The bold design Pleased highly those infernal States, and joy Sparkled in all their eyes: with full assent They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews:	385
140	Incapable of stain, would soon expel Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire, Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope Is flat despair: we must exasperate Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage;		“Well have ye judged, well ended long debate, Synod of Gods, and, like to what ye are, Great things resolved, which from the lowest deep Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate, Nearer our ancient seat — perhaps in view	390
145	And that must end us; that must be our cure —		Of those bright confines, whence, with neighbouring arms,	395
F32	To be no more. Sad cure! for who would lose,		And opportune excursion, we may chance	Milton
Milton	Though full of pain, this intellectual being,		Re-enter Heaven; or else in some mild zone	Paradise
Paradise	Those thoughts that wander through eternity, To perish rather, swallowed up and lost		Dwell, not unvisited of Heaven's fair light, Secure, and at the brightening orient beam	Lost
2.150	In the wide womb of uncreated Night,	16	Purge off this gloom: the soft delicious air,	2.400

Aspect he rose, and in his rising seemed
Milton A pillar of state. Deep on his front engraven
Paradise Deliberation sat, and public care;
Lost And princely counsel in his face yet shone,
S37 ♦ Majestic though in ruin. Sage he stood
F37 With Atlantean shoulders, fit to bear
 The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look
 Drew audience and attention still as night
 Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spake:
 310 "Thrones and Imperial Powers, Offspring of Heaven,
 Ethereal Virtues! or these titles now
 Must we renounce, and, changing style, be called
 Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote
 Inclines — here to continue, and build up here
 315 A growing empire; doubtless! while we dream,
 And know not that the King of Heaven hath doomed
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
 Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt
 From Heaven's high jurisdiction, in new league
 320 Banded against his throne, but to remain
 In strictest bondage, though thus far removed,
 Under th' inevitable curb, reserved
 His captive multitude. For he, be sure,
 In height or depth, still first and last will reign
 325 Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part
L3[O] By our revolt, but over Hell extend
A His empire, and with iron sceptre rule
 Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.
 What sit we then projecting peace and war?
 330 War hath determined us and foiled with loss
 Irreparable; terms of peace yet none
 Vouchsafed or sought; for what peace will be given
 To us enslaved, but custody severe,
 And stripes and arbitrary punishment
 335 Inflicted? and what peace can we return,
 But, to our power, hostility and hate,
 Untamed reluctance, and revenge, though slow,
F38 Yet ever plotting how the Conqueror least
S38 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice
 340 In doing what we most in suffering feel?
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dangerous expedition to invade
 Heaven, whose high walls fear no assault or siege,
 Or ambush from the Deep. What if we find
 345 Some easier enterprise? There is a place
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in Heaven
 Err not) — another World, the happy seat
 Of some new race, called Man, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 2.350 In power and excellence, but favoured more

14 (11C)

5 (4C)

5

17

Devoid of sense and motion? And who knows,
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
Milton Can give it, or will ever? How he can
Paradise Is doubtful; that he never will is sure.
Lost Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,
 155 Belike through impotence or unaware,
 To give his enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger whom his anger saves
 To punish endless? 'Wherefore cease we, then?'
 Say they who counsel war; 'we are decreed,
 160 Reserved, and destined to eternal woe;
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
 What can we suffer worse?' Is this, then, worst —
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms?
 What when we fled amain, pursued and struck
 165 With Heaven's afflicting thunder, and besought
 The Deep to shelter us? This Hell then seemed
 A refuge from those wounds. Or when we lay
 Chained on the burning lake? That sure was worse. **S33**
 What if the breath that kindled those grim fires,
 170 Awaked, should blow them into sevenfold rage,
 And plunge us in the flames; or from above
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us? What if all
 Her stores were opened, and this firmament
 175 Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,
L3[O] Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall
A One day upon our heads; while we perhaps, **F33**
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,
 Caught in a fiery tempest, shall be hurled,
 180 Each on his rock transfixed, the sport and prey
 Or racking whirlwinds, or forever sunk
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains,
 There to converse with everlasting groans,
 Unrespited, unpitied, unreprieved,
 185 Ages of hopeless end. This would be worse.
 War, therefore, open or concealed, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
 Views all things at one view? He from Heaven's height
 190 All these our motions vain sees and derides,
 Not more almighty to resist our might
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we, then, live thus vile — the race of Heaven
 Thus trampled, thus expelled, to suffer here
 195 Chains and these torments? Better these than worse,
 By my advice; since fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,
 The Victor's will. To suffer, as to do,
 Our strength is equal; nor the law unjust
 2.200

That so ordains. This was at first resolved,
 ♀1K If we were wise, against so great a foe
 S34 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 I laugh when those who at the spear are bold
 205 ♦ And venturous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear
 What yet they know must follow — to endure
 Exile, or igominy, or bonds, or pain,
 The sentence of their Conqueror. This is now
 Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,
 210 F34 Our Supreme Foe in time may much remit
 His anger, and perhaps, thus far removed,
 Not mind us not offending, satisfied
 With what is punished; whence these raging fires
 Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.
 215 Our purer essence then will overcome
 Their noxious vapour; or, inured, not feel;
 Or, changed at length, and to the place conformed
 In temper and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat; and, void of pain,
 220 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light;
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting — since our present lot appears
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
 225 If we procure not to ourselves more woe.”
 L3[I] Thus Belial, with words clothed in reason’s garb,
 A Counsell’d ignoble ease and peaceful sloth,
 Not peace; and after him thus Mammon spake:
 “Either to disenthroned the King of Heaven
 230 We war, if war be best, or to regain
 Our own right lost. Him to unthroned we then
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield
 To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife.
 The former, vain to hope, argues as vain
 235 The latter; for what place can be for us
 Within Heaven’s bound, unless Heaven’s Lord supreme
 S35 We overpower? Suppose he should relent
 And publish grace to all, on promise made
 Of new subjection; with what eyes could we
 240 Stand in his presence humble, and receive
 Strict laws imposed, to celebrate his throne
 F35 With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing
 Forced hallelujahs, while he lordly sits
 Our envied sovereign, and his altar breathes
 245 Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers,
 Milton Our servile offerings? This must be our task
 Paradise In Heaven, this our delight. How wearisome
 Lost Eternity so spent in worship paid
 To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue,
 2.250 By force impossible, by leave obtained

15 (12C)

6 (5C)

6

18

Unacceptable, though in Heaven, our state
 Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek
 Our own good from ourselves, and from our own
 Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,
 Free and to none accountable, preferring 255
 Hard liberty before the easy yoke
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear
 Then most conspicuous when great things of small,
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,
 We can create, and in what place soe’er 260
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heaven’s all-ruling Sire
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscured, 265
 And with the majesty of darkness round
 Covers his throne, from whence deep thunders roar.
 Mustering their rage, and Heaven resembles Hell!
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light
 Imitate when we please? This desert soil 270
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;
 S36 Nor want we skill or art from whence to raise
 Magnificence; and what can Heaven show more?
 Our torments also may, in length of time, F36
 Become our elements, these piercing fires 275
 As soft as now severe, our temper changed L3[I]
 Into their temper; which must needs remove A
 The sensible of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280
 Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are and where, dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise.”
 He scarce had finished, when such murmur filled
 Th’ assembly as when hollow rocks retain 285
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long
 Had roused the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
 Seafaring men o’erwatched, whose bark by chance
 Or pinnacle, anchors in a craggy bay
 After the tempest. Such applause was heard 290
 As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleased,
 Advising peace: for such another field
 They dreaded worse than Hell; so much the fear
 Of thunder and the sword of Michael
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire 295
 To found this nether empire, which might rise, Milton
 By policy and long process of time, Paradise
 In emulation opposite to Heaven. Lost
 Which when Beelzebub perceived — than whom,
 Satan except, none higher sat — with grave 2.300

Milton Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men
Paradise Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
Lost Presented with a universal blank
F63 S63 Of nature's works to me expung'd and ras'd,
3.50 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.
 So much the rather thou, celestial Light,
 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
 Irradiate; there plant eyes, all mist from thence
 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
55 Of things invisible to mortal sight.
 Now had the Almighty Father from above,
 From the pure empyrean where he sits
 High thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye
 His own works and their works at once to view:
60 About him all the Sanctities of Heaven
 Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd
 Beatitude past utterance; on his right
 The radiant image of his glory sat,
 His only son; on earth he first beheld
65 Our two first parents, yet the only two
 Of mankind in the happy garden plac'd
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
 Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,
 In blissful solitude; he then survey'd
70 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there
L1[O] Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night
B In the dun air sublime, and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet,
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd
75 Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
 Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake:
80 "Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage
F64 Transports our Adversary? whom no bounds
 Prescrib'd no bars of Hell, nor all the chains
S64 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss
 Wide interrupt, can hold; so bent he seems
85 On desperate revenge, that shall redound
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now,
 Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way
 Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,
 Directly towards the new created world,
90 And man there plac'd, with purpose to assay
 If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,
 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert;
 For man will hearken to his glozing lies,
 And easily transgress the sole command,
3.95 Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall
 He and his faithless progeny: Whose fault?

16 Free Virtue should enthrall to Force or Chance.
 Their song was partial; but the harmony
Milton (What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?) **Paradise**
 Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment **Lost**
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet **555**
 (For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Sense)
 Others apart sat on a hill retired,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reasoned high
 Of Providence, Foreknowledge, Will, and Fate —
 Fixed fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute, **560**
 And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.
 Of good and evil much they argued then, **F45**
 Of happiness and final misery,
 Passion and apathy, and glory and shame:
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy! — **565**
 Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm
 Pain for a while or anguish, and excite
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured breast
 With stubborn patience as with triple steel.
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, **570**
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge **575**
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams — **L1[O]**
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate; **S45 B**
 Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep;
 Cocytus, named of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream; fierce Phlegeton, **580**
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,
 Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls
 Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets — **585**
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems **590**
 Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,
 A gulf profound as that Serbonian bog
 Betwixt Damiata and Mount Casius old,
 Where armies whole have sunk: the parching air **F46**
 Burns frore, and cold performs th' effect of fire. **595**
 Thither, by harpy-footed Furies haled,
 At certain revolutions all the damned
 Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice **2.600**

Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infixed, and frozen round
 Periods of time; thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this Lethean sound
 605 ♦ Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so near the brink;
 610 But Fate withstands, and, to oppose th' attempt,
 S46 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards
 The ford, and of itself the water flies
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on
 615 In confused march forlorn, th' adventurous bands,
 With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 Viewed first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest. Through many a dark and dreary vale
 They passed, and many a region dolorous,
 620 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery alp,
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death —
 A universe of death, which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good;
 Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds,
 625 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
 L1[I] F47 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 B Than fables yet have feigned or fear conceived,
 Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.
 Meanwhile the Adversary of God and Man,
 630 Satan, with thoughts inflamed of highest design,
 Puts on swift wings, and toward the gates of Hell
 Explores his solitary flight: sometimes
 He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left;
 Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars
 635 Up to the fiery concave towering high.
 As when far off at sea a fleet descried
 Hangs in the clouds, by equinoctial winds
 Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles
 Of Ternate and Tidore, whence merchants bring
 640 Their spicy drugs; they on the trading flood,
 Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape,
 Ply stemming nightly toward the pole: so seemed
 Far off the flying Fiend. At last appear
 Hell-bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,
 S47 645 And thrice threefold the gates; three folds were brass,
 Milton Three iron, three of adamant rock,
 Paradise Impenetrable, impaled with circling fire,
 Lost Yet unconsumed. Before the gates there sat
 On either side a formidable Shape.
 2.650 The one seemed woman to the waist, and fair,

17

8

8

20

And, fast by, hanging in a golden chain, S59
 This pendent World, in bigness as a star
 Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.
 Thither, full fraught with mischievous revenge,
 Accursed, and in a cursed hour, he hies. 2.1055
 HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven firstborn, 3.1
 Or of the Eternal coeternal beam
 May I express thee unblam'd? since God is light,
 And never but in unapproached light
 Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee 5
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
 Or hearest thou rather pure ethereal stream,
 Whose fountain who shall tell? before the sun,
 Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice
 Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest 10
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,
 Won from the void and formless infinite.
 Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,
 Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd
 In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight S62
 Through utter and through middle darkness borne,
 With other notes than to the Orphean lyre F62
 I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;
 Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down
 The dark descent, and up to re-ascend, 20
 Though hard and rare; — Thee I revisit safe, L1[I]
 And feel thy sovran vital lamp; but thou B
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
 So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs, 25
 Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more
 Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt,
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
 Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief
 Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath, 30
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,
 Nightly I visit: nor sometimes forget
 So were I equall'd with them in renown,
 Thy sovran command, that Man should find grace;
 Blind Thamyras, and blind Maeonides, 35
 And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old:
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move
 Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful bird
 Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid
 Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year 40
 Seasons return; but not to me returns
 Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
 Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;
 But cloud instead, and ever-during dark 3.45

Encroached on still through our intestine broils
Milton Weakening the sceptre of old Night: first, Hell,
Paradise Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath;
Lost Now lately Heaven and Earth, another world
1005 ♦ Hung o'er my realm, linked in a golden chain
To that side Heaven from whence your legions fell!
If that way be your walk, you have not far;
So much the nearer danger. Go, and speed;
Havoc, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.”
1010 F59 He ceased; and Satan stayed not to reply,
But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,
With fresh alacrity and force renewed
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,
Into the wild expanse, and through the shock
1015 Of fighting elements, on all sides round
Environed, wins his way; harder beset
S58 And more endangered than when Argo passed
Through Bosphorus betwixt the justling rocks,
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunned
1020 Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steered.
So he with difficulty and labour hard
Moved on, with difficulty and labour he;
But, he once passed, soon after, when Man fell,
Strange alteration! Sin and Death amain,
1025 Following his track (such was the will of Heaven)
L2[O] Paved after him a broad and beaten way
B Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling gulf
Tamely endured a bridge of wondrous length,
From Hell continued, reaching th' utmost orb
1030 Of this frail World; by which the Spirits perverse
With easy intercourse pass to and fro
To tempt or punish mortals, except whom
God and good Angels guard by special grace.
But now at last the sacred influence
1035 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heaven
Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night
A glimmering dawn. Here Nature first begins
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire,
As from her outmost works, a broken foe,
1040 With tumult less and with less hostile din;
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,
F60 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light,
And, like a weather-beaten vessel, holds
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn;
1045 Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold
Far off th' empyreal Heaven, extended wide
In circuit, undetermined square or round,
With opal towers and battlements adorned
2.1050 Of living sapphire, once his native seat;

18 (13C)

9 (6C)

9

21

But ended foul in many a scaly fold,
Voluminous and vast — a serpent armed
Milton With mortal sting. About her middle round
Paradise A cry of Hell-hounds never-ceasing barked
Lost With wide Cerberian mouths full loud, and rung
655 A hideous peal; yet, when they list, would creep,
If aught disturbed their noise, into her womb,
And kennel there; yet there still barked and howled
F48 Within unseen. Far less abhorred than these
660 Vexed Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts
Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore;
Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, called
In secret, riding through the air she comes,
Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance
665 With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon
Eclipses at their charms. The other Shape —
If shape it might be called that shape had none
Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb;
Or substance might be called that shadow seemed,
670 For each seemed either — **black it stood as Night,**
Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,
And shook a dreadful dart: what seemed his head
The likeness of a kingly crown had on.
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
675 The monster moving onward came as fast
With horrid strides; Hell trembled as he strode. **L2[O]**
Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admired — **B**
Admired, not feared (God and his Son except,
S48 Created thing naught valued he nor shunned),
680 And with disdainful look thus first began: —
“Whence and what art thou, execrable Shape,
That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance
Thy miscreated front athwart my way
To yonder gates? Through them I mean to pass,
685 That be assured, without leave asked of thee.
Retire; or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,
Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heaven.”
To whom the Goblin, full of wrath, replied: —
“Art thou that traitor Angel? art thou he,
F49 690 Who first broke peace in Heaven and faith, till then
Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's sons,
Conjured against the Highest — for which both thou
And they, outcast from God, are here condemned
695 To waste eternal days in woe and pain?
And reckon'st thou thyself with Spirits of Heaven
Hell-doomed, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,
Where I reign king, and, to enrage thee more,
Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,
False fugitive; and to thy speed add wings, 2.700

Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue
 Thy lingering, or with one stroke of this dart
 Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.”
 So spake the grisly Terror, and in shape,
 705 ♦ So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold,
 More dreadful and deform. On th’ other side,
 Incensed with indignation, Satan stood
 Unterrified, and **like a comet burned,**
That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge
 710 **In th’ arctic sky,** and from his horrid hair
 Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head
 Levelled his deadly aim; their fatal hands
 S49 No second stroke intend; and such a frown
 Each cast at th’ other **as when two black clouds,**
 715 **With heaven’s artillery fraught, came rattling on**
Over the Caspian, — then stand front to front
 Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow
 To join their dark encounter in mid-air.
 So frowned the mighty combatants that Hell
 720 Grew darker at their frown; so matched they stood;
 For never but once more was either like
 F50 To meet so great a foe. And now great deeds
 Had been achieved, whereof all Hell had rung,
 Had not the snaky Sorceress, that sat
 725 Fast by Hell-gate and kept the fatal key,
 L2[I] Risen, and with hideous outcry rushed between.
 B “O father, what intends thy hand,’ she cried,
 Against thy only son? What fury, O son,
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart
 730 Against thy father’s head? And know’st for whom?
 For him who sits above, and laughs the while
 At thee, ordained his drudge to execute
 Whate’er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids; —
 His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both!”
 735 She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest
 Forbore: then these to her Satan returned: —
 “So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,
 Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 740 What it intends, till first I know of thee
 What thing thou art, thus double-formed, and why,
 In this infernal vale first met, thou call’st
 Me father, and that phantasm call’st my son.
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
 745 Sight more detestable than him and thee.”
 S50 T’ whom thus the Portress of Hell-gate replied:
 Milton “Hast thou forgot me, then? and do I seem
 Paradise Now in thine eye so foul? — once deemed so fair
 Lost In Heaven, when at th’ assembly, and in sight
 2.750 Of all the Seraphim with thee combined

19 (14c)

10 (7c)

10

22

At length a universal hubbub wild
 Of stunning sounds, and voices all confused,
 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear
 With loudest vehemence. Thither he plies
 Undaunted, to meet there whatever Power 955
 Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies
 Bordering on light; when straight behold the throne
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread 960
 Wide on the wasteful Deep! With him enthroned
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,
 The consort of his reign; and by them stood
 Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded name
 Of Demogorgon; Rumour next, and Chance, 965
 And Tumult, and Confusion, all embroiled,
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.
 T’ whom Satan, turning boldly, thus: — “Ye Powers
 And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy 970
 With purpose to explore or to disturb
 The secrets of your realm; but, by constraint
 Wandering this darksome desert, as my way
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light,
 Alone and without guide, half lost, I seek, 975
 What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds
 L2[I] Confine with Heaven; or, if some other place,
 B From your dominion won, th’ Ethereal King F58
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive
 I travel this profound. Direct my course: 980
 Directed, no mean recompense it brings
 To your behoof, if I that region lost,
 All usurpation thence expelled, reduce S57
 To her original darkness and your sway
 (Which is my present journey), and once more 985
 Erect the standard there of ancient Night.
 Yours be th’ advantage all, mine the revenge!”
 Thus Satan; and him thus the Anarch old,
 With faltering speech and visage incomposed,
 Answered: “I know thee, stranger, who thou art — 990
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late
 Made head against Heaven’s King, though overthrown.
 I saw and heard; for such a numerous host
 Fled not in silence through the frightened Deep,
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout, 995
 Confusion worse confounded; and Heaven-gates
 Milton Poured out by millions her victorious bands, Paradise
 Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here
 Lost Keep residence; if all I can will serve
 2.1000 That little which is left so to defend,

	Of each his faction, in their several clans,	20 (15C)	In bold conspiracy against Heaven's King,	Milton
Milton	Light-armed or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,		All on a sudden miserable pain	Paradise
Paradise	Swarm populous, unnumbered as the sands		Surprised thee, dim thine eyes and dizzy swum	Lost
Lost	Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,		In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast	F51
905 ♦	Levied to side with warring winds, and poise		Threw forth, till on the left side opening wide,	755
	Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere		Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright,	
	He rules a moment: Chaos umpire sits,		Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess armed,	
	And by decision more embroils the fray		Out of thy head I sprung. Amazement seized	
	By which he reigns: next him, high arbiter,		All th' host of Heaven; back they recoiled afraid	
910	Chance governs all. Into this wild Abyss,		At first, and called me Sin, and for a sign	760
	The womb of Nature, and perhaps her grave,		Portentous held me; but, familiar grown,	
	Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,		I pleased, and with attractive graces won	
	But all these in their pregnant causes mixed		The most averse — thee chiefly, who, full oft	
F56	Confusedly, and which thus must ever fight,		Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,	
S55	Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain		Becam'st enamoured; and such joy thou took'st	765
	His dark materials to create more worlds —		With me in secret that my womb conceived	
	Into this wild Abyss the wary Fiend		A growing burden. Meanwhile war arose,	
	Stood on the brink of Hell and looked a while,		And fields were fought in Heaven: wherein remained	^9K
	Pondering his voyage; for no narrow frith		(For what could else?) to our Almighty Foe	
920	He had to cross. Nor was his ear less pealed		Clear victory; to our part loss and rout	770
	With noises loud and ruinous (to compare		Through all the Empyrean. Down they fell,	
	Great things with small) than when Bellona storms		Driven headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down	
	With all her battering engines, bent to rase		Into this Deep; and in the general fall	
	Some capital city; or less than if this frame		I also: at which time this powerful key	
925	Of Heaven were falling, and these elements		Into my hands was given, with charge to keep	775
L3[O]	In mutiny had from her axle torn		These gates for ever shut, which none can pass	L3[O]
B	The steadfast Earth. At last his sail-broad vans		Without my opening. Pensive here I sat	B
	He spread for flight, and, in the surging smoke		Alone; but long I sat not, till my womb,	
	Uplifted, spurns the ground; thence many a league,		Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,	S51
930	As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides		Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.	780
	Audacious; but, that seat soon failing, meets		At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,	
	A vast vacuity. All unawares,	11 (8C)	Thine own begotten, breaking violent away,	
	Fluttering his pennons vain, plumb-down he drops		Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain	
	Ten thousand fathom deep, and to this hour		Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew	
935	Down had been falling, had not, by ill chance,		Transformed: but he my inbred enemy	785
	The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,		Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,	F52
	Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him		Made to destroy. I fled, and cried out Death!	
	As many miles aloft. That fury stayed —	11	Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sighed	
	Quenched in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea,		From all her caves, and back resounded Death!	
940	Nor good dry land — nigh foundered, on he fares,		I fled; but he pursued (though more, it seems,	790
	Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,		Inflamed with lust than rage), and, swifter far,	
	Half flying; behoves him now both oar and sail.		Me overtook, his mother, all dismayed,	
	As when a gryphon through the wilderness		And, in embraces forcible and foul	
	With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,		Engendering with me, of that rape begot	
945	Pursues the Arimasbian, who by stealth		These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry	795
F57	Had from his wakeful custody purloined		Surround me, as thou saw'st — hourly conceived	
	The guarded gold; so eagerly the Fiend		And hourly born, with sorrow infinite	
	O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,		To me; for, when they list, into the womb	
S56	With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,		That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw	
2.950	And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies.	23	My bowels, their repast; then, bursting forth	2.800

	Afresh, with conscious terrors vex me round, That rest or intermission none I find. Before mine eyes in opposition sits Grim Death, my son and foe, who set them on,	21 (16C)	And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King, I keep, by him forbidden to unlock These adamantine gates; against all force Death ready stands to interpose his dart,	855
805 ♦	And me, his parent, would full soon devour For want of other prey, but that he knows His end with mine involved, and knows that I Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane, Whenever that shall be: so Fate pronounced.		But what owe I to his commands above, Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down Into this gloom of Tartarus profound, To sit in hateful office here confined,	
810	But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope To be invulnerable in those bright arms,		Inhabitant of Heaven and heavenly born —	860
S52	Through tempered heavenly; for that mortal dint, Save he who reigns above, none can resist.”		Here in perpetual agony and pain, With terrors and with clamours compassed round Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed? Thou art my father, thou my author, thou	
815	She finished; and the subtle Fiend his lore Soon learned, now milder, and thus answered smooth: “Dear daughter — since thou claim'st me for thy sire,		My being gav'st me; whom should I obey	865
F53	And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys		But thee? whom follow? Thou wilt bring me soon To that new world of light and bliss, among The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems	
820	Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change Befallen us unforeseen, unthought of — know, I come no enemy, but to set free From out this dark and dismal house of pain Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host		Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.”	870
825	Of Spirits that, in our just pretences armed, L3[I] Fell with us from on high. From them I go B This uncouth errand sole, and one for all Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread Th' unfounded Deep, and through the void immense		Thus saying, from her side the fatal key, Sad instrument of all our woe, she took; And, towards the gate rolling her bestial train, Forthwith the huge portcullis high up-drew, Which, but herself, not all the Stygian Powers	875
L3[I]			Could once have moved; then in the key-hole turns	L3[I]
B			Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and bar	B
830	To search, with wandering quest, a place foretold Should be — and, by concurring signs, ere now Created vast and round — a place of bliss In the purlieu of Heaven; and therein placed A race of upstart creatures, to supply	12 (9C)	Of massy iron or solid rock with ease Unfastens. On a sudden open fly, With impetuous recoil and jarring sound,	880
835	Perhaps our vacant room, though more removed, Lest Heaven, surcharged with potent multitude, Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or aught Than this more secret, now designed, I haste To know; and, this once known, shall soon return,	12	Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook Of Erebus. She opened; but to shut Excelled her power: the gates wide open stood, That with extended wings a bannered host,	885
840	And bring ye to the place where thou and Death Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen Wing silently the buxom air, embalmed With odours. There ye shall be fed and filled Immeasurably; all things shall be your prey.”		Under spread ensigns marching, mibht pass through With horse and chariots ranked in loose array; So wide they stood, and like a furnace-mouth Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame. Before their eyes in sudden view appear	890
845	He ceased; for both seemed highly pleased, and Death Grinned horrible a ghastly smile, to hear		The secrets of the hoary Deep — a dark Illimitable ocean, without bound, Without dimension; where length, breadth, and height, And time, and place, are lost; where eldest Night And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold	895
Milton			Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise	Milton
S53	His famine should be filled, and blessed his maw Destined to that good hour. No less rejoiced		Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.	Paradise
Paradise			For Hot, Cold, Moist, and Dry, four champions fierce,	Lost
Lost	His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire:		Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring Their embryon atoms: they around the flag	2.900
2.850 F54	“The key of this infernal Pit, by due	24		

So easily destroyed, and still destroys

Milton In those who, when they may, accept not grace.

Paradise Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume

Lost Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.

F71 Because thou hast, though throned in highest bliss

Equal to God, and equally enjoying

God-like fruition, quitted all, to save

A world from utter loss, and hast been found

By merit more than birthright Son of God,

310 Found worthiest to be so by being good,

Far more than great or high; because in thee

Love hath abounded more than glory abounds;

Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt

With thee thy manhood also to this throne:

315 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign

Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,

Anointed universal King; all power

I give thee; reign for ever, and assume

Thy merits; under thee, as head supreme,

320 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce:

All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide

S71 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.

When thou, attended gloriously from Heaven,

Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send

325 The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim

L1(O) Thy dread tribunal; forthwith from all winds,

A The living, and forthwith the cited dead

Of all past ages, to the general doom

Shall hasten; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.

330 Then, all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge

Bad Men and Angels; they, arraigned, shall sink

Beneath thy sentence; Hell, her numbers full,

Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while

The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring

335 New Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,

And, after all their tribulations long,

F72 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,

With joy and peace triumphing, and fair truth.

Then thou thy regal scepter shalt lay by,

340 For regal scepter then no more shall need,

God shall be all in all. But, all ye Gods,

♦ Adore him, who to compass all this dies;

Adore the Son, and honour him as me."

No sooner had the Almighty ceased, but all

345 The multitude of Angels, with a shout

Loud as from numbers without number, sweet

As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heaven rung

With jubilee, and loud Hosannas filled

The eternal regions: Lowly reverent

3.350 Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's First Edition (in 10 books) printed by Peter Parker (1667). The First Edition does not number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's Second Edition (in 12 books) printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 3



**EPIC
POEM
.ORG
DIGITAL CLASSICS**

PREVIEW
Book 4

A 2L 1 - 350
B 1L 351 - 550
C 1L 551 - 742

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 742 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
25 to 32

HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven firstborn,
 Or of the Eternal coeternal beam
 May I express thee unblam'd? since God is light,
 And never but in unapproach'd light
 5 Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
 Or hearest thou rather pure ethereal stream,
 Whose fountain who shall tell? before the sun,
 Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice
 10 Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,
 Won from the void and formless infinite.
 Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,
 Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd
 S62 In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight
 Through utter and through middle darkness borne,
 F62 With other notes than to the Orphean lyre
 I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;
 Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down
 20 The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,
 Though hard and rare; — Thee I revisit safe,
 And feel thy sovran vital lamp; but thou
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
 25 So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,
 L1[I] Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more
 A Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt,
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
 Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief
 30 Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath,
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,
 Nightly I visit: nor sometimes forget
 So were I equall'd with them in renown,
 Thy sovran command, that Man should find grace;
 35 Blind Thamyras, and blind Maeonides,
 And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old:
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move
 Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful bird
 Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid
 40 Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year
 Seasons return; but not to me returns
 ♦ Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
 Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;
 45 But cloud instead, and ever-during dark
 Milton Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men
 Paradise Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
 Lost Presented with a universal blank
 F63 S63 Of nature's works to me expung'd and ras'd,
 3.50 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.

23 (17C)

2 (1C)

2

26

My vanquisher, spoiled of his vaunted spoil.
 Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarmed;
 I through the ample air in triumph high S69
 Shall lead Hell captive maugre Hell, and show 255
 The powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight
 Pleased, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,
 While, by thee raised, I ruin all my foes,
 Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave;
 Then, with the multitude of my redeemed, 260
 Shall enter Heaven, long absent, and return,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assured
 And reconciliation: wrath shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire." 265
 His words here ended; but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breathed immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shone
 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice
 Glad to be offered, he attends the will 270
 Of his great Father. Admiration seized
 All Heaven, what this might mean, and whither tend,
 Wondering; but soon th' Almighty thus replied. F70
 "O thou in Heaven and Earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou 275
 My sole complacence! Well thou know'st how dear L1[I]
 To me are all my works; nor Man the least, A
 Though last created, that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost. 280
 Thou, therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,
 Their nature also to thy nature join;
 And be thyself Man among men on Earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth; be thou in Adam's room 285
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,
 As from a second root, shall be restored S70
 As many as are restored, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his sons; thy merit, 290
 Imputed, shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for Man, be judged and die, 295
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise Milton
 His brethren, ransomed with his own dear life. Paradise
 So heavenly love shall outdo hellish hate, Lost
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,
 So dearly to redeem what hellish hate 3.300

	That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;	24 (18C)	So much the rather thou, celestial Light,	
Milton	And none but such from mercy I exclude.		Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers	Milton
Paradise	But yet all is not done; Man disobeying,		Irradiate; there plant eyes, all mist from thence	Paradise
Lost	Disloyal, breaks his fealty, and sins		Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell	Lost
205	Against the high supremacy of Heaven,		Of things invisible to mortal sight.	55
	Affecting God-head, and, so losing all,		Now had the Almighty Father from above,	
	To expiate his treason hath nought left,		From the pure empyrean where he sits	
	But to destruction sacred and devote,		High thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye	
F68	He, with his whole posterity, must die,		His own works and their works at once to view:	
210	Die he or justice must; unless for him		About him all the Sanctities of Heaven	60
	Some other able, and as willing, pay		Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd	
	The rigid satisfaction, death for death.		Beatitude past utterance; on his right	
	Say, heavenly Powers, where shall we find such love?		The radiant image of his glory sat,	
	Which of you will be mortal, to redeem		His only son; on earth he first beheld	
215	Man's mortal crime, and just the unjust to save?		Our two first parents, yet the only two	65
	Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear?"		Of mankind in the happy garden plac'd	
	He asked, but all the heavenly quire stood mute,		Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,	
	And silence was in Heaven: on Man's behalf		Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,	
S68	Patron or intercessour none appear'd,		In blissful solitude; he then survey'd	
220	Much less that durst upon his own head draw		Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there	70
	The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.		Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night	
	And now without redemption all mankind		In the dun air sublime, and ready now	
	Must have been lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell		To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet,	
	By doom severe, had not the Son of God,		On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd	
225	In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,		Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,	75
L2[O]	His dearest mediation thus renew'd:		Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.	L2[O]
A	"Father, thy word is past, Man shall find grace;		Him God beholding from his prospect high,	A
	And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,		Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,	
	The speediest of thy winged messengers,		Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake:	
230	To visit all thy creatures, and to all		"Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage	80
	Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought?		Transports our Adversary? whom no bounds	F64
	Happy for Man, so coming; he her aid	3 (2C)	Prescrib'd no bars of Hell, nor all the chains	
	Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost;		Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss	S64
	Atonement for himself, or offering meet,		Wide interrupt, can hold; so bent he seems	
235	Indebted and undone, hath none to bring;		On desperate revenge, that shall redound	85
	Behold me then: me for him, life for life		Upon his own rebellious head. And now,	
	I offer: on me let thine anger fall;		Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way	
	Account me Man; I for his sake will leave		Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,	
	Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee	3	Directly towards the new created world,	
240	Freely put off, and for him lastly die		And man there plac'd, with purpose to assay	90
F69	Well pleased; on me let Death wreak all his rage.		If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,	
♦	Under his gloomy power I shall not long		By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert;	
	Lie vanquished. Thou hast given me to possess		For man will hearken to his glozing lies,	
	Life in myself forever; by thee I live;		And easily transgress the sole command,	
245	Though now to Death I yield, and am his due,		Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall	95
	All that of me can die, yet, that debt paid,		He and his faithless progeny: Whose fault?	
	Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave		Whose but his own? ingrate, he had of me	
	His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul		All he could have; I made him just and right,	
	For ever with corruption there to dwell;		Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.	@
3.250	But I shall rise victorious, and subdue	27	Such I created all the ethereal Powers	3.100

And Spirits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd;
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.
 Not free, what proof could they have given sincere
 Of true allegiance, constant faith or love,
 105 Where only what they needs must do appear'd,
 Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
 When will and reason (reason also is choice)
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,
 110 Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,
 Not me? they therefore, as to right belonged,
 So were created, nor can justly accuse
 F65 Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,
 As if predestination over-rul'd
 115 Their will dispos'd by absolute decree
 Or high foreknowledge they themselves decreed
 S65 Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,
 @ Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.
 120 So without least impulse or shadow of fate,
 Or aught by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, **authors to themselves in all**
 Both what they judge, and what they choose; for so
 I form'd them free: and free they must remain,
 125 Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change
 L2[I] Their nature, and revoke the high decree
 A Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom: they themselves ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
 130 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: Man falls, deceiv'd
 By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,
 The other none: In mercy and justice both,
 4 (3C) Through Heaven and Earth, so shall my glory excel;
 But Mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine."
 135 Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
 All Heaven, and in the blessed Spirits elect
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd.
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious; in him all his Father shone
 4
 140 Substantially express'd; and in his face
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,
 ♦ Love without end, and without measure grace,
 Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake.
 "O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd
 F66 Thy sovran command, that Man should find grace;
 Milton For which both Heaven and earth shall high extol
 v2K Thy praises, with the innumerable sound
 Paradise Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
 Lost Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.
 3.150 For should Man finally be lost, should Man,

25 (19C) Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,
 S66 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
 With his own folly? that be from thee far,
 That far be from thee, Father, who art judge
 Of all things made, and judgest only right. 155
 Or shall the Adversary thus obtain
 His end, and frustrate thine? shall he fulfill
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,
 Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell 160
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,
 By him corrupted? or wilt thou thyself
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made?
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both 165
 Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence."
 To whom the great Creator thus replied.
 "O son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170
 All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all
 As my eternal purpose hath decreed;
 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will;
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me
 Freely vouchsaf'd; once more I will renew 175
 His lapsed powers, though forfeit; and enthrall'd L2[I]
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires; F67 A
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
 On even ground against his mortal foe;
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180
 His fallen condition is, and to me owe
 All his deliverance, and to none but me.
 Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,
 Elect above the rest — so is my will;
 The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd S67
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes
 The incensed Deity, while offer'd grace
 Invites; for I will clear their senses dark,
 What may suffice, and soften stony hearts
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190
 To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,
 Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,
 Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
 And I will place within them as a guide,
 My umpire Conscience; whom if they will hear, 195
 Light after light, well us'd, they shall attain, Milton
 And to the end, persisting, safe arrive. Paradise
 This my long sufferance, and my day of grace, Lost
 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;
 But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 3.200

	His travelled steps: far distant he describes	26 (20C)	With solemn adoration down they cast	
Milton	Ascending by degrees magnificent		Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold;	Milton
Paradise	Up to the wall of Heaven a structure high;		Immortal amarant, a flower which once	Paradise
Lost	At top whereof, but far more rich, appeared		In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life,	Lost
505	The work as of a kingly palace-gate,		Began to bloom; but soon for man's offence	355
	With frontispiece of diamond and gold		To Heaven removed, where first it grew, there grows,	S72
	Embellished; thick with sparkling orient gems		And flowers aloft shading the Fount of Life,	
	The portal shone, inimitable on earth		And where the River of Bliss through midst of Heaven	
	By model, or by shading pencil drawn.		Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream;	
510	The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw		With these that never fade the Spirits elect	360
	Angels ascending and descending, bands		Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams;	
	Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled		Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright	
	To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz		Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,	
	Dreaming by night under the open sky		Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.	
515	And waking cried, This is the gate of Heaven.		Then, crowned again, their golden harps they took,	365
	Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood		Harps ever tuned, that glittering by their side	
	There always, but drawn up to Heaven sometimes		Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet	
	Viewless; and underneath a bright sea flowed		Of charming symphony they introduce	
	Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon		Their sacred song, and waken raptures high;	F73
520	Who after came from earth, failing arrived		No voice exempt, no voice but well could join	370
	Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake		Melodious part, such concord is in Heaven.	
	Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.		Thee, Father, first they sung Omnipotent,	
	The stairs were then let down, whether to dare		Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,	
	The Fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate		Eternal King; the Author of all being,	
525	His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss:		Fountain of light, thyself invisible	375
L1[O] S77	Direct against which opened from beneath,		Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st	L1[O]
B	Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,		Throned inaccessible, but when thou shadest	B
	A passage down to the Earth, a passage wide,		The full blaze of thy beams, and, through a cloud	
F78	Wider by far than that of after-times		Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,	
530	Over mount Sion, and, though that were large,		Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,	380
	Over the Promised Land to God so dear;		Yet dazzle Heaven, that brightest Seraphim	
	By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,	5 (4C)	Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.	
	On high behests his angels to and fro		Thee next they sang of all creation first,	
	Passed frequent, and his eye with choice regard		Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,	
535	From Paneas, the fount of Jordan's flood,		In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud	385
	To Beersaba, where the Holy Land		Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,	
	Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore;		Whom else no creature can behold; on thee	
	So wide the opening seemed, where bounds were set		Impressed the effulgence of his glory abides,	
	To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.	5	Transfused on thee his ample Spirit rests.	
540	Satan from hence, now on the lower stair,		"He Heaven of Heavens and all the Powers therein	S73 390
	That scaled by steps of gold to Heaven-gate,		By thee created; and by thee threw down	
♦	Looks down with wonder at the sudden view		The aspiring Dominations: Thou that day	
	Of all this world at once. As when a scout,		Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,	
	Through dark and dessert ways with peril gone		Nor stop thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook	
545	All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn		Heaven's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks	395
	Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,		Thou drovest of warring Angels disarrayed.	
	Which to his eye discovers unaware		Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaim	
	The goodly prospect of some foreign land		Thee only extolled, Son of thy Father's might,	
	First seen, or some renowned metropolis		To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,	
3.550	With glistering spires and pinnacles adorned,	29	Not so on Man: Him through their malice fallen,	3.400

F74	Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom So strictly, but much more to pity incline. No sooner did thy dear and only Son Perceive thee purposed not to doom frail Man	27 (21C)	All who have their reward on earth, the fruits Of painful superstition and blind zeal, Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find Fit retribution, empty as their deeds;	
405	So strictly, but much more to pity inclined, He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife Of mercy and justice in thy face discerned, Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat Second to thee, offered himself to die		All the unaccomplished works of Nature's hand, Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixed, Dissolved on Earth, fleet hither, and in vain, Till final dissolution, wander here;	455 S75
410	For Man's offence. O unexampled love, Love nowhere to be found less than Divine! Hail, Son of God, Saviour of Men! Thy name Shall be the copious matter of my song Henceforth, and never shall my heart thy praise Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin."		Not in the neighbouring moon as some have dreamed; Those argent fields more likely habitants, Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold Betwixt the angelical and human kind. Hither of ill-joined sons and daughters born First from the ancient world those giants came With many a vain exploit, though then renowned:	460 F76
415	Thus they in Heaven, above the starry sphere, Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent. Meanwhile upon the firm opacous globe Of this round world, whose first convex divides		The builders next of Babel on the plain Of Sennaar, and still with vain design, New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build: Others came single; he, who, to be deemed A God, leaped fondly into Aetna flames,	470
420	The luminous inferiour orbs, enclosed From Chaos, and the inroad of Darkness old, Satan alighted walks: A globe far off It seemed, now seems a boundless continent		Empedocles; and he, who, to enjoy Plato's Elysium, leaped into the sea, Cleombrotus; and many more too long, Embryos, and idiots, eremites, and friars	475
S74	Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night		White, black, and grey, with all their trumpery.	L1[I]
425	Starless exposed, and ever-threatening storms		Here pilgrims roam, that strayed so far to seek In Golgotha him dead, who lives in Heaven;	B
L1[I]	Of Chaos blustering round, inclement sky;		And they, who to be sure of Paradise, Dying, put on the weeds of Dominick, Or in Franciscan think to pass disguised.	480
B	Save on that side which from the wall of Heaven, Though distant far, some small reflection gains Of glimmering air less vexed with tempest loud:		They pass the planets seven, and pass the fixed, And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs The trepidation talked, and that first moved; And now Saint Peter at Heaven's wicket seems To wait them with his keys, and now at foot Of Heaven's ascent they lift their feet, when lo! A violent cross-wind from either coast Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry Into the devious air: Then might ye see Cowls, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost And fluttered into rags; then reliques, beads, Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,	485 490 S76
430	Here walked the Fiend at large in spacious field. As when a vultur on Imaus bred, Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds, Dislodging from a region scarce of prey To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids, On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams; But in his way lights on the barren plains Of Sericana, where Chinese drive With sails and wind their cany waggons light;	6 (5C)	The sport of winds: all these, upwhirled aloft, Fly o'er the backside of the world far off Into a Limbo large and broad, since called The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown Long after; now unpeopled, and untrod.	495 Milton F77
F75	So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend Walked up and down alone, bent on his prey;	6	All this dark globe the Fiend found as he passed, And long he wandered, till at last a gleam Of dawning light turned thither-ward in haste	Paradise Lost 3.500
435	Alone, for other creature in this place, Living or lifeless, to be found was none; None yet, but store hereafter from the earth Up hither like aerial vapours flew			
440	Of all things transitory and vain, when sin With vanity had filled the works of men:			
♦	Both all things vain, and all who in vain things Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,			
445	Or happiness in this or the other life;	30		
Milton				
Paradise				
Lost				
3.450				

Contented with report, hear only in Heaven:

Milton For wonderful indeed are all his works,
Paradise Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
Lost Had in remembrance always with delight;
705 But what created mind can comprehend
Their number, or the wisdom infinite
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep?
I saw when at his word the formless mass,
This world's material mould, came to a heap:
710 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar
Stood ruled, stood vast infinitude confined;
Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,
^8K Light shone, and order from disorder sprung:
Swift to their several quarters hasted then
715 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire;
And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
That rolled orbicular, and turned to stars
Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move;
720 Each had his place appointed, each his course;
F84 The rest in circuit walls this universe.
Look downward on that globe, whose hither side
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines;
That place is Earth, the seat of Man; that light
725 His day, which else, as the other hemisphere,
L1[O] Night would invade; but there the neighbouring moon
C — So call that opposite fair star — her aid
Timely interposes, and her monthly round
Still ending, still renewing, through mid-Heaven,
S83 730 With borrowed light her countenance triform
Hence fills and empties to enlighten the Earth,
And in her pale dominion checks the night.
7 That spot, to which I point, is Paradise,
Adam's abode; those lofty shades, his bower.
735 Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.”
Thus said, he turned; and Satan, bowing low,
As to superiour Spirits is wont in Heaven,
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,
Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,
740 Down from the ecliptick, sped with hoped success,
Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel;
3.742 ♦ Nor staid, till on Niphates' top he lights.
4.1  for that warning voice, which he, who saw
The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
Came furious down to be revenged on men,
5 Woe to the inhabitants on earth! that now,
While time was, our first parents had been warned
The coming of their secret foe, and 'scaped,
4.8 Haply so 'scaped his mortal snare: For now
Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,

28

Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams:

Such wonder seised, though after Heaven seen, **Milton**
The Spirit malign, but much more envy seised, **Paradise**
At sight of all this world beheld so fair. **Lost**
Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood 555
So high above the circling canopy
Of night's extended shade,) from eastern point
Of Libra to the fleecy star that bears
Andromeda far off Atlantick seas
Beyond the horizon; then from pole to pole S79 560
He views in breadth, and without longer pause F79
Down right into the world's first region throws
His flight precipitant, and winds with ease
Through the pure marble air his oblique way
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone 565
Stars distant, but nigh hand seemed other worlds;
Or other worlds they seemed, or happy isles,
Like those Hesperian gardens famed of old,
Fortunate fields, and groves, and flowery vales,
Thrice happy isles; but who dwelt happy there 570
He staid not to inquire: Above them all
The golden sun, in splendour **likest Heaven,**
Allured his eye; thither his course he bends
Through the calm firmament — but up or down,
By center, or eccentric, hard to tell, 575
Or longitude — where the great luminary, **L1[O]**
Aloof the vulgar constellations thick, **C**
That from his lordly eye keep distance due,
Dispenses light from far; they, as they move
Their starry dance in numbers that compute 580
Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering lamp
Turn swift their various motions, or are turned
By his magnetick beam, that gently warms
The universe, and to each inward part
With gentle penetration, though unseen, 585
Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep;
So wonderously was set his station bright.
There lands the Fiend, **a spot like which perhaps**
Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb
Through his glazed optick tube yet never saw. 590
The place he found beyond expression bright,
Compared with aught on earth, metal or stone;
Not all parts like, but all alike informed **F80**
With radiant light, **as glowing iron with fire;** **S79**
If metal, part seemed gold, part silver clear; 595
If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,
Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone
In Aaron's breast-plate, and a stone besides
Imagined rather oft than elsewhere seen,
That stone, or like to that which here below 3.600

7

7

31

Philosophers in vain so long have sought,
 In vain, though by their powerful art they bind
 Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,
 605 Drained through a limbeck to his native form.
 What wonder then if fields and regions here
 Breathe forth Elixir pure, and rivers run
 Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch
 The arch-chemick sun, so far from us remote,
 610 Produces, with terrestrial humour mixed,
 Here in the dark so many precious things
 Of colour glorious, and effect so rare?
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
 Undazzled; far and wide his eye commands;
 615 For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,
 But all sun-shine, **as when his beams at noon
 Culminate from the equator, as they now
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round
 Shadow from body opaque can fall;** and the air,
 620 No where so clear, sharpened his visual ray
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,
 The same whom John saw also in the sun:
 His back was turned, but not his brightness hid;
 F81 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar
 L1[I] Circl'd his head, nor less his locks behind
 C Illustrious on his shoulders fledge with wings
 S80 Lay waving round; on some great charge employed
 He seemed, or fixed in cogitation deep.
 630 Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope
 To find who might direct his wandering flight
 To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,
 His journey's end and our beginning woe.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,
 635 Which else might work him danger or delay:
 And now a stripling Cherub he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smiled celestial, and to every limb
 Suitable grace diffused, so well he feigned:
 640 Under a coronet his flowing hair
 In curls on either cheek played; wings he wore
 ♦ Of many a coloured plume, sprinkled with gold;
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
 Before his decent steps a silver wand.
 645 He drew not nigh unheard; the Angel bright,
 Milton Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turned,
 Paradise Admonished by his ear, and straight was known
 Lost The Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the seven
 Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,
 3.650 Stand ready at command, and are his eyes

29 (22C)

8 (6C)

8

32

That run through all the Heavens, or down to the Earth
 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
 O'er sea and land: him Satan thus accosts.
 "Uriel, for thou of those seven Spirits that stand
 In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright, 655
 The first art wont his great authentick will
 Interpreter through highest Heaven to bring, F82
 Where all his sons thy embassy attend;
 And here art likeliest by supreme decree
 Like honour to obtain, and as his eye 660
 To visit oft this new creation round;
 Unspeakable desire to see, and know S81
 All these his wonderous works, but chiefly Man,
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
 All these his works so wonderous he ordained, 665
 Hath brought me from the quires of Cherubim
 Alone thus wandering. Brightest Seraph, tell
 In which of all these shining orbs hath Man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell; 670
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze
 Or open admiration him behold,
 On whom the great Creator hath bestowed
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces poured;
 That both in him and all things, as is meet, 675
 The universal Maker we may praise; L1[I]
 Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes C
 To deepest Hell, and, to repair that loss,
 Created this new happy race of Men
 To serve him better: Wise are all his ways." 680
 So spake the false dissembler unperceived;
 For neither Man nor Angel can discern
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone,
 By his permissive will, through Heaven and Earth: 685
 And oft, though wisdom wake, Suspicion sleeps
 At Wisdom's gate, and to simplicity
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems: Which now for once beguiled F83
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 690
 The sharpest-sighted Spirit of all in Heaven;
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,
 In his uprightness, answer thus returned:
 "Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know
 The works of God, thereby to glorify 695
 The great Work-master, leads to no excess S82
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise Milton
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither Paradise
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone, Lost
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps, 3.700

Milton **Paradise Lost** 505 **That shed May flowers**; and pressed her matron lip
 With kisses pure: Aside the Devil turned
 For envy; yet with jealous leer malign
 Eyed them askance, and to himself thus plained:
 "Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two,
 Imparadised in one another's arms,
 The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill
 Of bliss on bliss; while I to Hell am thrust,
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,
 510 Among our other torments not the least,
 Still unfulfilled with pain of longing pines.
 Yet let me not forget what I have gained
 From their own mouths: All is not theirs, it seems;
 One fatal tree there stands, of Knowledge called,
 515 ♦ Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge forbidden!
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord
 Envy them that? Can it be sin to know?
 Can it be death? And do they only stand
 By ignorance? Is that their happy state,
 520 The proof of their obedience and their faith?
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin! hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject
 Envious commands, invented with design
 525 To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt
L1[O] Equal with Gods. Aspiring to be such,
A They taste and die. What likelier can ensue? —
 But first with narrow search I must walk round
 530 **S101 F102** This garden, and no corner leave unspied.
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet
 Some wandering Spirit of Heaven by fountain-side,
 Or in thick shade retired, from him to draw
 What further would be learned. Live while ye may,
 Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,
 535 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed!"
 So saying, his proud step he scornful turned,
 But with sly circumspection, and began
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam
 Meanwhile in utmost longitude, where Heaven
 540 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise
 Levelled his evening rays. It was a rock
 Of alabaster, piled up to the clouds,
 545 Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high;
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.
 Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,
 4.550 Chief of the angelick guards, awaiting night.

30

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's First Edition (in 10 books) printed by Peter Parker (1667). The First Edition does not number pages; line 1.1 is on **F1^**.
S#^ top row of page # in Milton's Second Edition (in 12 books) printed by S. Simmon (1674)
 ♦ same row as last line of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 4



EPIC POEM

.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
 copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 1015 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
Book 5

A 3L 1 - 550
B 1L 551 - 750
C 2L 751 - 1015

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
 2-SIDED:
 33 to 44

33

O, for that warning voice, which he, who saw
 The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be revenged on men,
 5 Woe to the inhabitants on earth! that now,
 While time was, our first parents had been warned
 The coming of their secret foe, and 'scaped,
 Haply so 'scaped his mortal snare: For now
 Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,
 10 The tempter ere the accuser of mankind,
 To wreak on innocent frail Man his loss
 Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell:
 Yet, not rejoicing in his speed, though bold
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,
 15 ♦ Begins his dire attempt; which nigh the birth
 Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,
 And **like a devilish engine back recoils**
 F86 **Upon himself**; horror and doubt distract
 S86 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
 20 The Hell within him; for within him Hell
 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly
 By change of place: Now conscience wakes despair,
 That slumbered; wakes the bitter memory
 25 Of what he was, what is, and what must be
 L1[I] Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
 A Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view
 Lay pleasant, his grieved look he fixes sad;
 Sometimes towards Heaven, and the full-blazing sun,
 30 Which now sat high in his meridian tower:
 Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began:
 "O thou, that, with surpassing glory crowned,
 Lookest from thy sole dominion like the God
 Of this new world; at whose sight all the stars
 35 Hide their diminished heads; to thee I call,
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,
 Of Sun! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,
 That bring to my remembrance from what state
 I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere;
 40 Till pride and worse ambition threw me down
 ^^10K Warring in Heaven against Heaven's matchless King:
 Ah, wherefore! he deserved no such return
 From me, whom he created what I was
 In that bright eminence, and with his good
 45 Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.
 Milton What could be less than to afford him praise,
 Paradise The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,
 Lost ^{1/4} How due! yet all his good proved ill in me,
 And wrought but malice; lifted up so high
 4.50 F87 I 'sdeined subjection, and thought one step higher

31 (23C)

2 (1C)

3

34

Under a shade on flowers, much wondering where
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound
 Of waters issued from a cave, and spread
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmoved 455
 Pure as the expanse of Heaven; I thither went
 With unexperienced thought, and laid me down
 On the green bank, to look into the clear
 Smooth lake, that to me seemed another sky.
 As I bent down to look, just opposite 460
 A shape within the watery gleam appeared,
 S99 Bending to look on me: I started back,
 It started back; but pleased I soon returned,
 Pleased it returned as soon with answering looks
 Of sympathy and love: There I had fixed 465
 Mine eyes till now, and pined with vain desire,
 F100 Had not a voice thus warned me; "What thou seest,
 What there thou seest, fair Creature, is thyself;
 With thee it came and goes: but follow me,
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470
 Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he
 Whose image thou art; him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear
 Multitudes like thyself; and thence be called
 Mother of human race." What could I do, 475
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led?
 L1[I] Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,
 A Under a platane; yet methought less fair,
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,
 Than that smooth watery image: Back I turned;
 480 Thou following criedst aloud, "Return, fair Eve;
 Whom flyest thou? whom thou flyest, of him thou art,
 His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side 485
 Henceforth an individual solace dear;
 Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other half." With that thy gentle hand
 Seised mine: I yielded; and from that time see
 How beauty is excelled by manly grace, 490
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair."
 So spake our general mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unproved,
 And meek surrender, half-embracing leaned
 On our first father; half her swelling breast S100
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold Milton
 Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight Paradise
 Both of her beauty, and submissive charms, F101 Lost
 Smiled with superiour love, as Jupiter
 On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 4.500

Milton	By word or action marked. About them round	32 (24c)	Would set me highest, and in a moment quit	
F98	A lion now he stalks with fiery glare;		The debt immense of endless gratitude,	Milton
Paradise	Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied		So burdensome still paying, still to owe,	S87 Paradise
Lost	In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,		Forgetful what from him I still received,	Lost
405 ♥3K	Straight couches close, then, rising, changes oft		And understood not that a grateful mind	55
	His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,		By owing owes not, but still pays, at once	
	Whence rushing, he might surest seize them both,		Indebted and discharged; what burden then?	
	Griped in each paw: when, Adam first of men		O, had his powerful destiny ordained	
	To first of women Eve thus moving speech,		Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood	
410	Turned him, all ear to hear new utterance flow.		Then happy; no unbounded hope had raised	60
	“Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys,		Ambition! Yet why not some other Power	
	Dearer thyself than all; needs must the Power		As great might have aspired, and me, though mean,	
	That made us, and for us this ample world,		Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great	
	Be infinitely good, and of his good		Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within	
415 ♦	As liberal and free as infinite;		Or from without, to all temptations armed.	65
	That raised us from the dust, and placed us here		Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand?	
	In all this happiness, who at his hand		Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,	
	Have nothing merited, nor can perform		But Heaven’s free love dealt equally to all?	
	Aught whereof he hath need; he who requires		Be then his love accursed, since love or hate,	
420	From us no other service than to keep		To me alike, it deals eternal woe.	70
	This one, this easy charge, of all the trees		Nay, cursed be thou; since against his thy will	
	In Paradise that bear delicious fruit		Chose freely what it now so justly rues.	
	So various, not to taste that only Tree		Me miserable! which way shall I fly	
	Of Knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life;		Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?	
425	So near grows death to life, whate’er death is,		Which way I fly is Hell; myself am Hell;	75
L2[O]	Some dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou knowest		And, in the lowest deep, a lower deep	L2[O]
A S98	God hath pronounced it death to taste that tree,		Still threatening to devour me opens wide,	A
	The only sign of our obedience left,		To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven.	
	Among so many signs of power and rule		O, then, at last relent: Is there no place	
430	Conferred upon us, and dominion given		Left for repentance, none for pardon left?	80
	Over all other creatures that possess		None left but by submission; and that word	
	Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard	3 (2c)	Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame	F88
	One easy prohibition, who enjoy		Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduced	
F99	Free leave so large to all things else, and choice		With other promises and other vaunts	
435	Unlimited of manifold delights:		Than to submit, boasting I could subdue	85
	But let us ever praise him, and extol		The Omnipotent. Ay me! they little know	
	His bounty, following our delightful task,		How dearly I abide that boast so vain,	S88
	To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers,		Under what torments inwardly I groan,	
	Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.”	3	While they adore me on the throne of Hell.	
440	To whom thus Eve replied. “O thou for whom		With diadem and scepter high advanced,	90
	And from whom I was formed, flesh of thy flesh,		The lower still I fall, only supreme	
	And without whom am to no end, my guide		In misery: Such joy ambition finds.	
	And head, what thou hast said is just and right.		But say I could repent, and could obtain,	
	For we to him indeed all praises owe,		By act of grace, my former state; how soon	
445	And daily thanks; I chiefly, who enjoy		Would highth recall high thoughts, how soon unsay	95
	So far the happier lot, enjoying thee		What feigned submission swore? Ease would recant	
	Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou		Vows made in pain, as violent and void.	
	Like consort to thyself canst nowhere find.		For never can true reconciliation grow,	
	That day I oft remember, when from sleep		Where wounds of deadly hate have pierced so deep:	
4.450	I first awaked, and found myself reposed	35	Which would but lead me to a worse relapse	4.100

	And heavier fall: so should I purchase dear Short intermission bought with double smart. This knows my Punisher; therefore as far From granting he, as I from begging, peace;	33 (25C)	Couched, and now filled with pasture gazing sat, Or bedward ruminating; for the sun, Declined, was hasting now with prone career To the ocean isles, and in the ascending scale	
105	All hope excluded thus, behold, in stead Of us outcast, exiled, his new delight, Mankind created, and for him this world. So farewell, hope; and with hope farewell, fear; Farewell, remorse! all good to me is lost;		Of Heaven the stars that usher evening rose: When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood, Scarce thus at length failed speech recovered sad. "O Hell! what do mine eyes with grief behold! Into our room of bliss thus high advanced	355
110	Evil, be thou my good; by thee at least Divided empire with Heaven's King I hold, By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign; As Man ere long, and this new world, shall know."		Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, Not Spirits, yet to heavenly Spirits bright Little inferiour; whom my thoughts pursue With wonder, and could love, so lively shines In them divine resemblance, and such grace	S96 360
F89	Thus while he spake, each passion dimmed his face		The hand that formed them on their shape hath poured. Ah! gentle pair, ye little think how nigh Your change approaches, when all these delights Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe; More woe, the more your taste is now of joy; Happy, but for so happy ill secured	F97 370
115 ♦	Thrice changed with pale, ire, envy, and despair; Which marred his borrowed visage, and betrayed Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld. For heavenly minds from such distempers foul Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware, Each perturbation smoothed with outward calm,		Long to continue, and this high seat your Heaven Ill fenced for Heaven to keep out such a foe As now is entered; yet no purposed foe To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn, Though I unpitied: League with you I seek, And mutual amity, so strait, so close, That I with you must dwell, or you with me Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please, Like this fair Paradise, your sense; yet such Accept your Maker's work; he gave it me, Which I as freely give: Hell shall unfold, To entertain you two, her widest gates, And send forth all her kings; there will be room, Not like these narrow limits, to receive Your numerous offspring; if no better place, Thank him who puts me loth to this revenge On you who wrong me not for him who wronged. And should I at your harmless innocence Melt, as I do, yet publick reason just, Honour and empire with revenge enlarged, By conquering this new world, compels me now To do what else, though damned, I should abhor."	365
120	Artificer of fraud; and was the first That practised falsehood under saintly show, Deep malice to conceal, couched with revenge: Yet not enough had practised to deceive			
S89	Uriel once warned; whose eye pursued him down The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount Saw him disfigured, more than could befall Spirit of happy sort; his gestures fierce He marked and mad demeanour, then alone, As he supposed, all unobserved, unseen.			
125	So on he fares, and to the border comes Of Eden, where delicious Paradise, Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green, As with a rural mound, the champaign head Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild Access denied; and overhead upgrew Insuperable height of loftiest shade, Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,	4 (3C)		
L2[I]	A	4		
130	A sylvan scene, and, as the ranks ascend, Shade above shade, a woody theatre Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops The verdurous wall of Paradise upsprung; Which to our general sire gave prospect large Into his nether empire neighbouring round. And higher than that wall a circling row Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit, Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue, Appeared, with gay enamelled colours mixed:			
140	On which the sun more glad impressed his beams			
145				
F90				
Milton				
Paradise				
Lost				
4.150		36		
			To mark what of their state he more might learn,	4.400

Absolute rule; and hyacinthine locks
Milton Round from his parted forelock manly hung
Paradise Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad.
Lost She, as a veil, down to the slender waist
 305 Her unadorned golden tresses wore
F95 Dishevelled, but in wanton ringlets waved
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied
 Subjection, but required with gentle sway,
 And by her yielded, by him best received,
 310 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,
 And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay.
 Nor those mysterious parts were then concealed;
 Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame
 Of nature's works, honour dishonourable,
 315 ♦ Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind
 With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,
 And banished from man's life his happiest life,
 Simplicity and spotless innocence!
 So passed they naked on, nor shunned the sight
 320 Of God or Angel; for they thought no ill:
 So hand in hand they passed, the loveliest pair,
 That ever since in love's embraces met;
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born
 His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.
S95 Under a tuft of shade that on a green
L3[O] Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain-side
A They sat them down; and, after no more toil
 Of their sweet gardening labour than sufficed
 To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease
 330 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite
 More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,
 Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs
 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
 On the soft downy bank damasked with flowers:
 335 The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind,
 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream;
 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles
F96 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems
 Fair couple, linked in happy nuptial league,
 340 Alone as they. About them frisking played
 All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase
 In wood or wilderness, forest or den;
 Sporting the lion ramped, and in his paw
 Dandled the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,
 345 Gambolled before them; the unwieldy elephant,
 To make them mirth, used all his might, and wreathed
 His lithe proboscis; close the serpent sly,
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile
 4.350 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass

34 (26C)

5 (4C)

5

37

Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,
 When God hath showered the earth; so lovely seemed
Milton That landscape: and of pure now purer air
Paradise Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
Lost Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
S90 All sadness but despair. Now gentle gales,
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 Those balmy spoils. **As when to them who fail**
Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past
Mozambick, off at sea north-east winds blow
Sabeian odours from the spicy shore
Of Araby the blest; with such delay
Well pleased they slack their course, and many a league
Cheered with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles:
 160 So entertained those odorous sweets the Fiend,
 Who came their bane; though with them better pleased
 Than Asmodeus with the fishy fume
 That drove him, though enamoured, from the spouse
 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent
 170 From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.
 Now to the ascent of that steep savage hill
 Satan had journeyed on, pensive and slow;
 But further way found none, so thick entwined,
 As one continued brake, the undergrowth
 175 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplexed
L3[O] All path of man or beast that passed that way.
A One gate there only was, and that looked east
F91 On the other side: which when the arch-felon saw,
 Due entrance he disdained; and, in contempt,
 180 At one flight bound high over-leaped all bound
 Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within
 Lights on his feet. **As when a prowling wolf,**
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold:
Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash
Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,
S90 **Cross-barred and bolted fast, fear no assault,**
 190 **In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles:**
 So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold;
 So since into his church lewd hirelings climb.
 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,
 The middle tree and highest there that grew,
 195 Sat **like a cormorant**; yet not true life
 Thereby regained, but sat devising death
 To them who lived; nor on the virtue thought
 Of that life-giving plant, but only used
 For prospect, what well used had been the pledge
 4.200

Of immortality. So little knows
Any, but God alone, to value right
The good before him, but perverts best things
To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.

205 Beneath him with new wonder now he views,
To all delight of human sense exposed,
In narrow room, Nature's whole wealth, yea more,
A Heaven on Earth: For blissful Paradise
Of God the garden was, by him in the east

210 F92 Of Eden planted; Eden stretched her line
From Auran eastward to the royal towers
Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,
Or where the sons of Eden long before
Dwelt in Telassar: In this pleasant soil

215 ♦ His far more pleasant garden God ordained;
Out of the fertile ground he caused to grow
All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit

220 Of vegetable gold; and next to life,
Our death, the Tree of Knowledge, grew fast by,
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.

S92 Southward through Eden went a river large,
Nor changed his course, but through the shaggy hill

225 Passed underneath ungulfed; for God had thrown
L3[I] That mountain as his garden-mould high raised
A Upon the rapid current, which, through veins
Of porous earth with kindly thirst up-drawn,
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill

230 Watered the garden; thence united fell
Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,
Which from his darksome passage now appears,
And now, divided into four main streams,
Runs diverse, wandering many a famous realm

235 And country, whereof here needs no account;
But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
How from that sapphire fount the crisped brooks,
Rolling on orient pearl and sands of gold,
With mazy error under pendant shades

240 Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed
Flowers worthy of Paradise, which not nice Art

F93 In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon
Poured forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain,
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote

245 The open field, and where the unpierced shade

Milton Imbrowned the noontide bowers: Thus was this place
Paradise A happy rural seat of various view;
Lost Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,
Others whose fruit, burnished with golden rind,

4.250 Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true,

35 (27C)

6 (5C)

6

38

If true, here only, and of delicious taste:
Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks
Grazing the tender herb, were interposed,
Or palmy hillock; or the flowery lap

255 Of some irriguous valley spread her store,
Flowers of all hue, and without thorn the rose.
Another side, umbrageous grots and caves S93
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps

260 Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall
Down the slope hills, dispersed, or in a lake,
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crowned
Her crystal mirrour holds, unite their streams.
The birds their quire apply; airs, vernal airs,

265 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune
The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,
Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field
Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flowers,
Herself a fairer flower by gloomy Dis 270
Was gathered, which cost Ceres all that pain
To seek her through the world; nor that sweet grove
Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspired
Castalian spring, might with this Paradise F94
Of Eden strive; nor that Nyseian isle 275
Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham, L3[I]
Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Libyan Jove, A
Hid Amalthea, and her florid son
Young Bacchus, from his stepdame Rhea's eye;
Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard, 280
Mount Amara, though this by some supposed
True Paradise under the Ethiop line
By Nilus' head, enclosed with shining rock,
A whole day's journey high, but wide remote

285 From this Assyrian garden, where the Fiend
Saw, undelighted, all delight, all kind
Of living creatures, new to sight, and strange.
Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,
Godlike erect, with native honour clad
In naked majesty seemed lords of all, 290
And worthy seemed; for in their looks divine S94
The image of their glorious Maker shone,
Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,
(Severe, but in true filial freedom placed,)
Whence true authority in men; though both 295
Not equal, as their sex not equal seemed; Milton
For contemplation he and valour formed; Paradise
For softness she and sweet attractive grace; Lost
He for God only, she for God in him:
His fair large front and eye sublime declared 4.300

	Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay	36 (28C)	About him exercised heroick games	
Milton	Broidered the ground, more coloured than with stone		The unarmed youth of Heaven, but nigh at hand	Milton
Paradise	Of costliest emblem: Other creature here,		Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,	Paradise
Lost	Bird, beast, insect, or worm, durst enter none,		Hung high with diamond flaming, and with gold.	Lost
705	Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower		Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even	555
	More sacred and sequestered, though but feigned,		On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star	
	Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor Nymph		In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fired	
	Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,		Impress the air, and shows the mariner	
	With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,		From what point of his compass to beware	
710	Espoused Eve decked first her nuptial bed;		Impetuous winds. He thus began in haste:	560
	And heavenly quires the hymenaeon sung,		“Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given	
	What day the genial Angel to our sire		Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place	F103
	Brought her in naked beauty more adorned,		No evil thing approach or enter in.	S102
	More lovely, than Pandora, whom the Gods		This day at highth of noon came to my sphere	vv ¼
715 ♦	Endowed with all their gifts, and O! too like		A Spirit, zealous, as he seemed, to know	565
	In sad event, when to the unwiser son		More of the Almighty’s works, and chiefly Man,	
	Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnared		God’s latest image: I described his way	
	Mankind with her fair looks, to be avenged		Bent all on speed, and marked his aery gait;	
	On him who had stole Jove’s authentick fire.		But in the mount that lies from Eden north,	
720	Thus, at their shady lodge arrived, both stood,		Where he first lighted, soon discerned his looks	570
	Both turned, and under open sky adored		Alien from Heaven, with passions foul obscured:	
F108	The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heaven,		Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade	
	Which they beheld, the moon’s resplendent globe,		Lost sight of him: One of the banished crew,	
	And starry pole: “Thou also madest the night,		I fear, hath ventured from the deep, to raise	
725	Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day,		New troubles; him thy care must be to find.”	575
L1[O]	Which we, in our appointed work employed,		To whom the winged warriour thus returned.	L1[O]
B	Have finished, happy in our mutual help		“Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,	B
	And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss		Amid the sun’s bright circle where thou sitst,	
	Ordained by thee; and this delicious place		See far and wide: In at this gate none pass	
730	For us too large, where thy abundance wants		The vigilance here placed, but such as come	580
	Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.		Well known from Heaven; and since meridian hour	
	But thou hast promised from us two a race	7 (6C)	No creature thence: If Spirit of other sort,	
S107	To fill the earth, who shall with us extol		So minded, have o’er-leaped these earthly bounds	
	Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,		On purpose, hard thou knowest it to exclude	
735	And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.”		Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.	585
	This said unanimous, and other rites		But if within the circuit of these walks,	
	Observing none, but adoration pure		In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom	
	Which God likes best, into their inmost bower		Thou tellest, by morrow dawning I shall know.”	
	Handed they went; and, eased the putting off	7	So promised he; and Uriel to his charge	
740	These troublesome disguises which we wear,		Returned on that bright beam, whose point now raised	590
	Straight side by side were laid; nor turned, I ween,		Bore him slope downward to the sun now fallen	
	Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites		Beneath the Azores; whether the prime orb,	
	Mysterious of connubial love refused;		Incredible how swift, had thither rolled	
	Whatever hypocrites austere talk		Diurnal, or this less volubil earth,	F104
745	Of purity, and place, and innocence,		By shorter flight to the east, had left him there	595
	Defaming as impure what God declares		Arraying with reflected purple and gold	
	Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.		The clouds that on his western throne attend.	S[103](“101”)
	Our Maker bids increase; who bids abstain		Now came still Evening on, and Twilight grey	
	But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man?		Had in her sober livery all things clad;	
4.750	Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source	39	Silence accompanied; for beast and bird,	4.600

	They to their grassy couch, these to their nests Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale; She all night long her amorous descant sung; Silence was <u>pleased</u> : Now glowed the firmament	37 (29C)	With charm of earliest birds; nor rising sun On this delightful land; nor herb, fruit, flower, Glistening with dew; nor fragrance after showers; Nor grateful Evening mild; nor silent Night, With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,	655
605	With living sapphires: Hesperus, that led The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon, Rising in clouded majesty, at length Apparent queen unveiled her peerless light, And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.		But wherefore all night long shine these? for whom This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?"	F106
610	When Adam thus to Eve: "Fair Consort, the hour Of night, and all things now retired to rest, Mind us of like repose; since God hath set Labour and rest, as day and night, to men Successive; and the timely dew of sleep,		To whom our general ancestor replied: "Daughter of God and Man, accomplished Eve,	660
615 ♦	Now falling with soft slumbrous weight, inclines Our eyelids. Other creatures all day long Rove idle, unemployed, and less need rest; Man hath his daily work of body or mind Appointed, which declares his dignity,		These have their course to finish round the earth, By morrow evening, and from land to land In order, though to nations yet unborn, Ministring light prepared, they set and rise; Lest total Darkness should by night regain	S105
620	And the regard of Heaven on all his ways; While other animals unactive range, And of their doings God takes no account. To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east With first approach of light, we must be risen,		Her old possession, and extinguish life In Nature and all things; which these soft fires Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat Of various influence foment and warm, Temper or nourish, or in part shed down	670
625	And at our pleasant labour, to reform		Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow On earth, made hereby apter to receive Perfection from the sun's more potent ray. These then, though unbeheld in deep of night, Shine not in vain; nor think, though men were none,	675
L1[I] F105	Yon flowery arbours, yonder alleys green,		That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise:	L1[I]
B	Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown, That mock our scant manuring, and require More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth.		Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth	B
630	Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums,		Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep: All these with ceaseless praise his works behold	
S104	That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth, Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease; Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest."	8 (7C)	Both day and night: How often from the steep	680
635	To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorned" "My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst Unargued I obey: So God ordains; God is thy law, thou mine: To know no more Is woman's happiest knowledge, and her praise. With thee conversing I forget all time;	8	Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard Celestial voices to the midnight air, Sole, or responsive each to others note, Singing their great Creator! Oft in bands While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,	685
640	All seasons, and their change, all please alike. Sweet is the breath of Morn, her rising sweet, With charm of earliest birds: pleasant the sun, When first on this delightful land he spreads His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower, Glistening with dew; fragrant the fertile earth		Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven." Thus talking, hand in hand alone they passed On to their blissful bower. It was a place	F107 690
645	After soft showers; and sweet the coming on		Chosen by the sovran Planter, when he framed All things to Man's delightful use; the roof Of thickest covert was inwoven shade Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew	695
Milton	Of grateful Evening mild; then silent Night,		Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side	Milton
Paradise	With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,		Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,	Paradise
Lost	And these the gems of Heaven, her starry train:		Fenced up the verdant wall; each beauteous flower,	Lost
4.650	But neither breath of Morn, when she ascends	40	Iris all hues, roses, and jessamin,	S106
			Reared high their flourished heads between, and wrought Mosaic; underfoot the violet,	4.700

Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The earth outstretched immense, a prospect wide
 And various: Wondering at my flight and change
 To this high exaltation; suddenly
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
 And fell asleep; but O, how glad I waked
 To find this but a dream!" Thus Eve her night
 Related, and thus Adam answered sad.
 "Best image of myself, and dearer half,
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
 Affects me equally; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung, I fear;
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know that in the soul
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve
 Reason as chief; among these Fancy next
 Her office holds; of all external things
 Which the five watchful senses represent,
 She forms imaginations, aery shapes,
 Which Reason, joining or disjoining, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
 Into her private cell, when nature rests.
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes
 To imitate her; but, misjoining shapes,
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams;
 Ill-matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Some such resemblances, methinks, I find
 Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream,
 But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
 Evil into the mind of God or Man
 May come and go, so unproved, and leave
 No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,
 Waking thou never will consent to do.
 Be not disheartened then, nor cloud those looks,
 That wont to be more cheerful and serene,
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world;
 And let us to our fresh employments rise
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers
 That open now their choicest bosomed smells,
 Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store."
 So cheered he his fair spouse, and she was cheered;
 But silently a gentle tear let fall
 From either eye, and wiped them with her hair;
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,
 Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell
 Kissed, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
 And pious awe, that feared to have offended.
 So all was cleared, and to the field they haste.

38

Of human offspring, sole propriety
 In Paradise of all things common else!
 By thee adulterous Lust was driven from men
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,
 Relations dear, and all the charities
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.
 Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,
 Perpetual fountain of domestick sweets,
 Whose bed is undefiled and chaste pronounced,
 Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs used.
 Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendeared,
 Casual fruition; nor in court-amours,
 Mixed dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,
 Or serenate, which the starved lover sings
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.
 These, lulled by nightingales, embracing slept,
 And on their naked limbs the flowery roof
 Showered roses, which the morn repaired. Sleep on,
 Blest pair; and O, yet happiest, if ye seek
 No happier state, and know to know no more.
 Now had night measured with her shadowy cone
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim,
 Forth issuing at the accustomed hour, stood armed
 To their night watches in warlike parade;
 When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake.
 "Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the north;
 Our circuit meets full west." As flame they part,
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.
 From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he called
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.
 "Ithuriel and Zephon, with winged speed
 Search through this garden, leave unsearched no nook;
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,
 Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm.
 This evening from the sun's decline arrived,
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escaped
 The bars of Hell, on errand bad, no doubt:
 Such, where ye find, seise fast, and hither bring."
 So saying, on he led his radiant files,
 Dazzling the moon; these to the bower direct
 In search of whom they sought: Him there they found
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve,

Milton

Paradise

Lost

F109

755

760

765

S108

770

775

L1[O]

C

780

785

F110

790

795

4.800

9

9

41

S109 Assaying by his devilish art to reach
The organs of her fancy, and with them forge
Illusions, as he list, phantasms and dreams;
Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint
805 The animal spirits, that from pure blood arise
Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise
At least distempered, discontented thoughts,
Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,
Blown up with high conceits engendering pride.
810 Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear
Touched lightly; for no falsehood can endure
Touch of celestial temper, but returns
Of force to its own likeness. Up he starts
Discovered and surprised. As when a spark
815 ♦ Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid
Fit for the tun some magazine to store
Against a rumoured war, the smutty grain,
F111 With sudden blaze diffused inflames the air;
So started up in his own shape the Fiend.
820 Back stept those two fair Angels, half amazed
So sudden to behold the grisly king;
Yet thus, unmoved with fear, accost him soon:
“Which of those rebel Spirits adjudged to Hell
Comest thou, escaped thy prison? and, transformed,
825 Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,
L1[I] Here watching at the head of these that sleep?”
C “Know ye not then,” said Satan, filled with scorn,
“Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate
For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar.
830 Not to know me argues yourselves unknown,
The lowest of your throng; or, if ye know,
Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
Your message, like to end as much in vain?”
To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn:
S110 “Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,
Or undiminished brightness to be known,
As when thou stoodest in Heaven upright and pure;
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,
Departed from thee; and thou resemblest now
840 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul.
But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
This place inviolable, and these from harm.”
So spake the Cherub; and his grave rebuke,
845 Severe in youthful beauty, added grace
Milton Invincible: Abashed the Devil stood,
Paradise And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
Lost Virtue in her shape how lovely; saw, and pined
His loss; but chiefly to find here observed
4.850 F112 His lustre visibly impaired; yet seemed

39 Close at mine ear one called me forth to walk
With gentle voice; I thought it thine: It said,
“Why sleepest thou, Eve? now is the pleasant time,
The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
40 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake
Tunes sweetest his love-laboured song; now reigns
Full-orbed the moon, and with more pleasing light
Shadowy sets off the face of things; in vain,
If none regard; Heaven wakes with all his eyes,
F114 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire?
45 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.”
F120 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
To find thee I directed then my walk;
And on, methought, alone I passed through ways
5.50 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
Of interdicted knowledge: fair it seemed,
Much fairer to my fancy than by day:
And, as I wondering looked, beside it stood
One shaped and winged like one of those from Heaven
55 By us oft seen; his dewy locks distilled
Ambrosia; on that tree he also gazed;
And “O fair plant,” said he, “with fruit surcharged,
Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
Nor God, nor Man? Is knowledge so despised?
60 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?
L1[I] Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
C Longer thy offered good; why else set here?
This said, he paused not, but with venturous arm
S119 He plucked, he tasted; me damp horror chilled
At such bold words vouched with a deed so bold:
10 But he thus, overjoyed: “O fruit divine,
Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus crompt,
Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men.
70 And why not Gods of Men; since good, the more
Communicated, more abundant grows,
The author not impaired, but honoured more?
Here, happy creature, fair angelick Eve!
75 Partake thou also; happy though thou art,
Happier thou mayest be, worthier canst not be:
Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
Thyself a Goddess, not to earth confined,
But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes
F121 Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see
80 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.”
Milton So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
Paradise Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
Lost Which he had plucked; the pleasant savoury smell
5.85 So quickened appetite, that I, methought,

Milton In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
Paradise Battles and realms: In these he put two weights,
Lost The sequel each of parting and of fight:
S115 The latter quick up flew, and kicked the beam,
1005 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend:
“Satan, I know thy strength, and thou knowest mine;
Neither our own, but given: What folly then
To boast what arms can do? since thine no more
Than Heaven permits, nor mine, though doubled now
1010 F117 To trample thee as mire: For proof look up,
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign;
Where thou art weighed, and shown how light, how weak,
If thou resist.” The Fiend looked up, and knew
His mounted scale aloft: Nor more; but fled
4.1015 ♦ Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.
5.1 **N**OW Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime
Advancing, sowed the earth with orient pearl,
When Adam waked, so customed; for his sleep
Was aery-light, from pure digestion bred,
5 And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora’s fan,
Lightly dispersed, and the shrill matin song
Of birds on every bough; so much the more
His wonder was to find unawakened Eve
10 With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek,
L2[O] As through unquiet rest: He, on his side
C Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial love
Hung over her enamoured, and beheld
F119 Shot forth peculiar graces; then with voice
Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
Her hand soft touching, whispered thus: “Awake,
My fairest, my espoused, my latest found,
Heaven’s last best gift, my ever new delight!
20 Awake! The morning shines, and the fresh field
Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
How nature paints her colours, how the bee
25 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.”
^^9K Such whispering waked her, but with startled eye
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake:
“O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
My glory, my perfection! glad I see
30 Thy face, and morn returned; for I this night
S118 (Such night till this I never passed) have dreamed,
If dreamed, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,
Works of day past, or morrow’s next design,
But of offence and trouble, which my mind
5.35 Knew never till this irksome night: Methought,

40 Undaunted: — “If I must contend,” said he,
“Best with the best, the sender, not the sent,
Milton Or all at once; more glory will be won,
Paradise Or less be lost.” — “Thy fear,” said Zephon bold,
Lost “Will save us trial what the least can do
855 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.”
The Fiend replied not, overcome with rage;
But, like a proud steed reined, went haughty on,
Champing his iron curb: To strive or fly
He held it vain; awe from above had quelled **860**
His heart, not else dismayed. Now drew they nigh
The western point, where those half-rounding guards
Just met, and closing stood in squadron joined,
A waiting next command. To whom their Chief,
Gabriel, from the front thus called aloud: **865**
“O friends! I hear the tread of nimble feet
Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern
Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade;
And with them comes a third of regal port, **S111**
But faded splendour wan; who by his gait **870**
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,
Not likely to part hence without contest.
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.”
He scarce had ended, when those two approached,
And brief related whom they brought, where found, **875**
How busied, in what form and posture couched. **L2[O]**
To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake: **C**
“Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescribed
To thy transgressions, and disturbed the charge
Of others, who approve not to transgress **880**
By thy example, but have power and right
11 To question thy bold entrance on this place; **F113**
Employed, it seems, to violate sleep, and those
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss!”
To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow. **885**
“Gabriel? thou hadst in Heaven the esteem of wise,
And such I held thee; but this question asked
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain!
Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,
11 Though thither doomed! Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt **890**
And boldly venture to whatever place **v 1/3**
Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense
Dole with delight, which in this place I sought;
To thee no reason, who knowest only good, **895**
But evil hast not tried: and wilt object
His will who bounds us! Let him surer bar
His iron gates, if he intends our stay
In that dark durance: Thus much what was asked.
The rest is true, they found me where they say: **4.900**

But that implies not violence or harm.”
 Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel moved,
 S112 Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied.
 “O loss of one in Heaven to judge of wise
 905 Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,
 And now returns him from his prison ’scaped,
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither
 Unlicensed from his bounds in Hell prescribed;
 910 So wise he judges it to fly from pain
 However, and to ’scape his punishment!
 So judge thou still, presumptuous! till the wrath,
 Which thou incurrest by flying, meet thy flight
 F114 Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,
 915 ♦ Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain
 Can equal anger infinite provoked.
 But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee
 Came not all hell broke loose? is pain to them
 Less pain, less to be fled? or thou than they
 920 Less hardy to endure? Courageous Chief!
 The first in flight from pain! hadst thou alleged
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.”
 To which the Fiend thus answered, frowning stern:
 925 “Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,
 L2[I] Insulting Angel! well thou knowest I stood
 C Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid
 The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,
 And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.
 930 But still thy words at random, as before,
 Argue thy inexperience what behoves
 From hard assays and ill successes past
 A faithful leader, not to hazard all
 Through ways of danger by himself untried:
 935 I, therefore, I alone first undertook
 S113 To wing the desolate abyss, and spy
 This new created world, whereof in Hell
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers
 940 To settle here on earth, or in mid air;
 Though for possession put to try once more
 What thou and thy gay legions dare against;
 Whose easier business were to serve their Lord
 High up in Heaven, with songs to hymn his throne,
 945 And practised distances to cringe, not fight.”
 F115 To whom the warriour Angel soon replied:
 Milton “To say and straight unsay, pretending first
 Paradise Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,
 Lost Argues no leader but a liar traced,
 4.950 Satan, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,

41 (30C)

O sacred name of faithfulness profaned!
 Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?
 Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head.
 Was this your discipline and faith engaged,
 Your military obedience, to dissolve 955
 Allegiance to the acknowledged Power supreme?
 And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou
 Once fawned, and cringed, and servily adored
 Heaven’s awful Monarch? wherefore, but in hope 960
 To dispossess him, and thyself to reign?
 But mark what I arreed thee now, Avaunt!
 Fly neither whence thou fledst! If from this hour
 Within these hallowed limits thou appear,
 Back to the infernal pit I drag thee chained, 965
 And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn
 The facile gates of Hell too slightly barred.”
 So threatened he; but Satan to no threats
 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied:
 “Then when I am thy captive talk of chains, S114 970
 Proud liminary Cherub! but ere then ^7K
 Far heavier load thyself expect to feel
 From my prevailing arm, though Heaven’s King
 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,
 Us’d to the yoke, drawest his triumphant wheels 975
 In progress through the road of Heaven star-paved.” L2[I]
 While thus he spake, the angelick squadron bright C
 Turned fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns F116
 Their phalanx, and began to hem him round
 With ported spears, **as thick as when a field** 980
Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind
Sways them; the careful plowman doubting stands,
Left on the threshing floor his hopeless sheaves
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarmed, 985
 Collecting all his might, dilated stood,
Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremoved:
 His stature reached the sky, and on his crest
 Sat Horror plumed; nor wanted in his grasp
 What seemed both spear and shield: Now dreadful deeds 990
 Might have ensued, nor only Paradise
 In this commotion, but the starry cope
 Of Heaven perhaps, or all the elements
 At least had gone to wrack, disturbed and torn
 With violence of this conflict, had not soon 995
 The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray, Milton
 Hung forth in Heaven his golden scales, yet seen Paradise
 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign, Lost
 Wherein all things created first he weighed,
 The pendulous round earth with balanced air 4.1000

12 (8C)

12

44

Are many lesser faculties, that serve
Milton Reason as chief; among these Fancy next
Paradise Her office holds; of all external things
Lost Which the five watchful senses represent,
105 She forms imaginations, aery shapes,
Which Reason, joining or disjoining, frames
♦ All what we affirm or what deny, and call
Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
Into her private cell, when nature rests.
110 Oft in her absence mimick Fancy wakes
F122 To imitate her; but, misjoining shapes,
Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams;
Ill-matching words and deeds long past or late.
Some such resemblances, methinks, I find
115 Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream,
But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
Evil into the mind of God or Man
May come and go, so unreproved, and leave
No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope
120 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,
Waking thou never will consent to do.
Be not disheartened then, nor cloud those looks,
That wont to be more cheerful and serene,
Than when fair morning first smiles on the world;
125 And let us to our fresh employments rise
L1[O] Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers
A That open now their choisest bosomed smells,
Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store.”
So cheered he his fair spouse, and she was cheered;
130 But silently a gentle tear let fall
From either eye, and wiped them with her hair;
Two other precious drops that ready stood,
S121 Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell
Kissed, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
135 And pious awe, that feared to have offended.
So all was cleared, and to the field they haste.
But first, from under shady arborous roof
Soon as they forth were come to open sight
Of day-spring, and the sun, who, scarce up-risen,
140 With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean-brim,
Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,
Discovering in wide landscape all the east
F123 Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,
Lowly they bowed adoring, and began
145 Their orisons, each morning duly paid
In various style; for neither various style
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounced, or sung
Unmeditated; such prompt eloquence
5.150 Flowed from their lips, in prose or numerous verse,

42

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's
First Edition (in 10 books)
printed by Peter Parker (1667).
The First Edition does not
number pages; line 1.1 is on **F1^**.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's
Second Edition (in 12 books)
printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 5



DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 907 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
Book 6

A 1L 1 - 150
B 1L 151 - 350
C 2L 351 - 750
D 1L 751 - 907

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
45 to 54

45

NOW Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime
 Advancing, sowed the earth with orient pearl,
 When Adam waked, so custom'd; for his sleep
 Was aery-light, from pure digestion bred,
 5 And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound
 Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,
 ♦ Lightly dispersed, and the shrill matin song
 Of birds on every bough; so much the more
 His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
 10 With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek,
 As through unquiet rest: He, on his side
 Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,
 F119 Shot forth peculiar graces; then with voice
 Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whispered thus: "Awake,
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight!
 20 Awake! The morning shines, and the fresh field
 Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 25 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet."
 L1[I] ^^9K Such whispering waked her, but with startled eye
 A On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake:
 "O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
 My glory, my perfection! glad I see
 30 Thy face, and morn returned; for I this night
 S118 (Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day past, or morrow's next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 35 Knew never till this irksome night: Methought,
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice; I thought it thine: It said,
 "Why sleepest thou, Eve? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 40 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake
 Tunes sweetest his love-laboured song; now reigns
 Full-orbed the moon, and with more pleasing light
 Shadowy sets off the face of things; in vain,
 F114 If none regard; Heaven wakes with all his eyes,
 45 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire?
 Milton In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 F120 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze."
 Paradise I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
 Lost To find thee I directed then my walk;
 5.50 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways

43 (31C)

2 (1C)

2

46

That brought me on a sudden to the tree
 Of interdicted knowledge: fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my fancy than by day:
 And, as I wondering look'd, beside it stood
 One shaped and winged like one of those from Heaven 55
 By us oft seen; his dewy locks distilled
 Ambrosia; on that tree he also gaz'd;
 And "O fair plant," said he, "with fruit surcharged,
 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
 Nor God, nor Man? Is knowledge so despis'd? 60
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offer'd good; why else set here?
 This said, he paus'd not, but with venturous arm
 He pluck'd, he tast'd; me damp horror chill'd S119
 At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold:
 But he thus, overjoy'd: "O fruit divine,
 Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropt,
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men. 70
 And why not Gods of Men; since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant grows,
 The author not impaired, but honour'd more?
 Here, happy creature, fair angelick Eve!
 Partake thou also; happy though thou art, 75
 Happier thou mayest be, worthier canst not be: L1[I]
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods A
 Thyself a Goddess, not to earth confin'd,
 But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes F121
 Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see 80
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou."
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluck'd; the pleasant savoury smell
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
 And various: Wondering at my flight and change
 To this high exaltation; suddenly 90
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
 And fell asleep; but O, how glad I wak'd
 To find this but a dream!" Thus Eve her night
 Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.
 "Best image of myself, and dearer half, 95
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep Milton
 Affects me equally; nor can I like Paradise
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung, I fear; Lost
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none, S120
 Created pure. But know that in the soul 5.100

Milton Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm
Paradise Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs:
F128 S126 And Eve within, due at her hour prepared
Lost For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please
305 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst
Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,
♦ Berry or grape: To whom thus Adam called.
"Haste hither, Eve, and worth thy sight behold
Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape
310 Comes this way moving; seems another morn
Risen on mid-noon; some great behest from Heaven
To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
This day to be our guest. But go with speed,
And, what thy stores contain, bring forth, and pour
315 Abundance, fit to honour and receive
Our heavenly stranger: Well we may afford
Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow
From large bestowed, where Nature multiplies
Her fertile growth, and by disburdening grows
320 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare."
To whom thus Eve: "Adam, earth's hallowed mould,
Of God inspired! small store will serve, where store,
All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains
325 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes:
L1[O] But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,
B Each plant and juciest gourd, will pluck such choice
To entertain our Angel-guest, as he
Beholding shall confess, that here on Earth
330 God hath dispensed his bounties as in Heaven."
So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent
What choice to choose for delicacy best,
What order, so contrived as not to mix
F129 Tastes, not well joined, inelegant, but bring
Taste after taste upheld with kindest change;
S127 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
Whatever Earth, all-bearing mother, yields
In India East or West, or middle shore
340 In Pontus or the Punick coast, or where
Alcinous reigned, fruit of all kinds, in coat
Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,
She gathers, tribute large, and on the board
Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the grape
345 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths
From many a berry, and from sweet kernels pressed
She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold
Wants her fit vessels pure; then strows the ground
With rose and odours from the shrub unfumed.
5.350 Meanwhile our primitive great sire, to meet

44 (32C)

3 (2C)

3

47

More tuneable than needed lute or harp
To add more sweetness; and they thus began:
"These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
Milton Almighty! Thine this universal frame,
Paradise Thyself how wonderful then!
Lost Thus wonderful fair; Thyself how wonderful then!
155 Unspeakable, who sitst above these heavens
To us invisible, or dimly seen
In these thy lowest works; yet these declare
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.
Speak, ye who best can tell, ye sons of light,
160 Angels; for ye behold him, and with songs
And choral symphonies, day without night,
Circle his throne rejoicing; ye in Heaven
On Earth join all ye Creatures to extol
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.
165 Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,
If better thou belong not to the dawn,
S122 Sure pledge of day, that crownest the smiling morn
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere,
170 While day arises, that sweet hour of prime.
Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,
Acknowledge him thy greater; sound his praise
In thy eternal course, both when thou climbest,
And when high noon hast gained, and when thou fallest.
Moon, that now meetest the orient sun, now flyest,
F124 With the fixed Stars, fixed in their orb that flies;
L1[O] And ye five other wandering Fires, that move
B In mystick dance not without song, resound
His praise, who out of darkness called up light.
180 Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth
Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run
Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix
And nourish all things; let your ceaseless change
Vary to our great Maker still new praise.
185 Ye Mists and Exhalations, that now rise
From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,
In honour to the world's great Author rise;
Whether to deck with clouds the uncoloured sky,
190 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,
Rising or falling still advance his praise.
His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,
Breathe soft or loud; and, wave your tops, ye Pines,
With every plant, in sign of worship wave.
195 Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow,
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.
Join voices, all ye living Souls: Ye Birds,
That singing up to Heaven-gate ascend,
Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.
Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 5.200

S123	The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep; Witness if I be silent, morn or even, To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade, Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.	45 (33C)	Flew through the midst of Heaven; the angelick quires, On each hand parting, to his speed gave way Through all the empyreal road; till, at the gate Of Heaven arrived, the gate self-opened wide	255
205	Hail, universal Lord, be bounteous still To give us only good; and if the night		Divine the sovran Architect had framed. From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight, Star interposed, however small he sees, Not unconformed to other shining globes, Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crowned	260
F125 ♦	Have gathered aught of evil, or concealed, Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark!" So prayed they innocent, and to their thoughts		Above all hills. As when by night the glass Of Galileo, less assured, observes Imagined lands and regions in the moon: Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades Delos or Samos first appearing, kens	265
210	Firm peace recovered soon, and wonted calm. On to their morning's rural work they haste, Among sweet dews and flowers; where any row Of fruit-trees over-woody reached too far Their pampered boughs, and needed hands to check		A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan	S125 270
215	Fruitless embraces: or they led the vine To wed her elm; she, spoused, about him twines Her marriageable arms, and with him brings Her dower, the adopted clusters, to adorn His barren leaves. Them thus employed beheld		Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems A phoenix, gazed by all as that sole bird, When, to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.	F127
220	With pity Heaven's high King, and to him called Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deigned To travel with Tobias, and secured His marriage with the seven-times wedded maid. "Raphael," said he, "thou hearest what stir on Earth		At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise	275
225	Satan, from Hell 'scaped through the darksome gulf, Hath raised in Paradise; and how disturbed		He lights, and to his proper shape returns	L1[I]
L1[I]	Ⓐ This night the human pair; how he designs In them at once to ruin all mankind. Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend		A Seraph winged: Six wings he wore, to shade His lineaments divine; the pair that clad Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast	Ⓐ
230	Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade Thou findest him from the heat of noon retired, To respite his day-labour with repast, Or with repose; and such discourse bring on, As may advise him of his happy state,	4 (3C)	With regal ornament; the middle pair Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold And colours dipt in Heaven; the third his feet Shadowed from either heel with feathered mail, Sky-tinctured grain. Like Maia's son he stood,	280 285
S124	Happiness in his power left free to will, Left to his own free will, his will though free, Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware He swerve not, too secure: Tell him withal	4	And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance filled The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands Of Angels under watch; and to his state, And to his message high, in honour rise; For on some message high they guessed him bound.	290
F126	His danger, and from whom; what enemy,		Their glittering tents he passed, and now is come Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh, And flowering odours, cassia, nard, and balm; A wilderness of sweets; for Nature here Wantoned as in her prime, and played at will	295
240	Late fallen himself from Heaven, is plotting now The fall of others from like state of bliss; By violence? no, for that shall be withstood; But by deceit and lies: This let him know, Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend		Her virgin fancies pouring forth more sweet, Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.	Milton Paradise
245	Surprisal, unadmonished, unforewarned."		Him through the spicy forest onward come Adam discerned, as in the door he sat	Lost
Milton	So spake the Eternal Father, and fulfilled		Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun	5.300
Paradise	All justice: Nor delayed the winged Saint			
Lost	After his charge received; but from among Thousand celestial Ardours, where he stood			
5.250	Veiled with his gorgeous wings, up-springing light,	48		

	The great hierarchal standard was to move;	46 (34C)	His God-like guest, walks forth, without more train	
Milton	Tells the suggested cause, and casts between		Accompanied than with his own complete	Milton
Paradise	Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound		Perfections; in himself was all his state,	Paradise
Lost	Or taint integrity. But all obeyed		More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits	Lost
705	The wonted signal, and superior voice		On princes, when their rich retinue long	355
	Of their great Potentate; for great indeed		Of horses led, and grooms besmeared with gold,	
♦	His name, and high was his degree in Heaven.		Dazzles the croud, and sets them all agape.	
S138	His countenance, as the morning-star that guides		Nearer his presence Adam, though not awed,	
	The starry flock, allured them, and with lies		Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,	
710	Drew after him the third part of Heaven's host.		As to a superiour nature bowing low,	360
	"Meanwhile the Eternal eye, whose sight discerns		Thus said: "Native of Heaven, for other place	
	Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,		None can than Heaven such glorious shape contain;	
	And from within the golden lamps that burn		Since, by descending from the thrones above,	
	Nightly before him, saw without their light		Those happy places thou hast deigned a while	
715	Rebellion rising; saw in whom, how spread		To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us	365
	Among the sons of morn, what multitudes		Two only, who yet by sovran gift possess	
	Were banded to oppose his high decree;		This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower	F130
	And, smiling, to his only Son thus said.		To rest; and what the garden choicest bears	
	"Son, thou in whom my glory I behold		To sit and taste, till this meridian heat	
720	In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,		Be over, and the sun more cool decline."	370
	Nearly it now concerns us to be sure		Whom thus the angelick Virtue answered mild:	S128
F141	Of our Omnipotence, and with what arms		"Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such	
	We mean to hold what anciently we claim		Created, or such place hast here to dwell,	
	Of deity or empire: Such a foe		As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heaven,	
725	Is rising, who intends to erect his throne		To visit thee; lead on then where thy bower	375
L1[O]	Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north;		O'ershades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,	L1[O]
C	Nor so content, hath in his thought to try		I have at will." So to the sylvan lodge	C
	In battle, what our power is, or our right.		They came, that like Pomona's arbour smiled,	
	Let us advise, and to this hazard draw		With flowerets decked, and fragrant smells; but Eve,	
730	With speed what force is left, and all employ		Undecked save with herself, more lovely fair	380
	In our defence; lest unawares we lose		Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feigned	
	This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill."	5 (4C)	Of three that in mount Ida naked strove,	
	"To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear,		Stood to entertain her guest from Heaven; no veil	
	Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,		She needed, virtue-proof; no thought infirm	
735	Made answer: "Mighty Father, thou thy foes		Altered her cheek. On whom the Angel Hail!	385
	Justly hast in derision, and, secure,		Bestowed, the holy salutation used	
	Laughed at their vain designs and tumults vain,		Long after to blest Mary, second Eve:	
	Matter to me of glory, whom their hate		"Hail, Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb	
	Illustrates, when they see all regal power	5	Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,	
740	Given me to quell their pride, and in event		Than with these various fruits the trees of God	✓4K 390
S139	Know whether I be dextrous to subdue		Have heaped this table!" — Raised of grassy turf	
	Thy rebels, or be found the worst in Heaven."		Their table was, and mossy seats had round,	
	"So spake the Son; but Satan, with his Powers,		And on her ample square from side to side	
	Far was advanced on winged speed; an host		All autumn piled, though spring and autumn here	
745	Innumerable as the stars of night,		Danced hand in hand. A while discourse they hold;	395
	Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun		No fear lest dinner cool; when thus began	
	Impearls on every leaf and every flower.		Our author: "Heavenly stranger, please to taste	
	Regions they passed, the mighty regencies		These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom	
	Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,		All perfect good, unmeasured out, descends,	F131
5.750	In their triple degrees; regions to which	49	To us for food and for delight hath caused	5.400

	The earth to yield; unsavoury food perhaps To spiritual natures; only this I know, That one celestial Father gives to all."	47 (35C)	Dispersed in bands and files, their camp extend By living streams among the trees of life, Pavilions numberless, and sudden reared, Celestial tabernacles, where they slept	
S129	To whom the Angel: "Therefore what he gives		Fanned with cool winds; save those, who, in their course,	655
405	(Whose praise be ever sung) to Man in part Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found		Melodious hymns about the sovran throne	
♦	No ingrateful food: And food alike those pure Intelligential substances require,		Alternate all night long. But not so waked Satan; so call him now, his former name	F139
	As doth your rational; and both contain		Is heard no more in Heaven; he of the first,	
410	Within them every lower faculty Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste, Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate, And corporeal to incorporeal turn.		If not the first Arch-Angel, great in power,	660
	For know, whatever was created, needs		In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught With envy against the Son of God, that day Honoured by his great Father, and proclaimed Messiah, King anointed, could not bear	
415	To be sustained and fed: Of elements The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea, Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires Ethereal, and as lowest first the moon;		Through pride that sight, and thought himself impaired.	665
	Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurged		Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain, Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolved With all his legions to dislodge, and leave	
420	Vapours not yet into her substance turned. Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale From her moist continent to higher orbs. The sun that light imparts to all, receives From all his alimential recompence		Unworshipt, unobeyed, the throne supreme,	670
	In humid exhalations, and at even		Contemptuous; and his next subordinate Awakening, thus to him in secret spake:	
425	In humid exhalations, and at even		"Sleepest thou, Companion dear? What sleep can close Thy eye-lids? and rememberest what decree Of yesterday, so late hath passed the lips	S137
L1[I]	Sups with the ocean. Though in Heaven the trees		Of Heaven's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts	L1[I]
C	Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines Yield nectar; though from off the boughs each morn We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground		Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart; Both waking we were one; how then can now Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou seest imposed;	C
430	Covered with pearly grain: Yet God hath here		New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise	680
F132	Varied his bounty so with new delights, As may compare with Heaven; and to taste Think not I shall be nice." So down they sat, And to their viands fell; nor seemingly	6 (5C)	In us who serve, new counsels to debate What doubtful may ensue: More in this place To utter is not safe. Assemble thou Of all those myriads which we lead the chief;	
435	The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss Of Theologians; but with keen dispatch Of real hunger, and concoctive heat		Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim night	685
	To transubstantiate: What redounds, transpires Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder: if by fire	6	Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste, And all who under me their banners wave, Homeward, with flying march, where we possess The quarters of the north; there to prepare	
S130	Of sooty coal the empirick alchemist Can turn, or holds it possible to turn, Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold, As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve Ministered naked, and their flowing cups		Fit entertainment to receive our King,	F140 690
440	Of sooty coal the empirick alchemist Can turn, or holds it possible to turn, Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold, As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve Ministered naked, and their flowing cups		The great Messiah, and his new commands, Who speedily through all the hierarchies Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws."	
445	With pleasant liquours crowned: O innocence		"So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infused Bad influence into the unwary breast	695
Milton	Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,		Of his associate. He together calls,	Milton
Paradise	Then had the sons of God excuse to have been		Or several one by one, the regent Powers,	Paradise
Lost	Enamoured at that sight; but in those hearts Love unlibidinous reigned, nor jealousy		Under him Regent; tells, as he was taught, That the Most High commanding, now ere night, Now ere dim night had disincumbered Heaven,	Lost 5.700
5.450	Was understood, the injured lover's hell.	50		

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers;
Milton Hear my decree, which unrevoked shall stand.
Paradise This day I have begot whom I declare
Lost My only Son, and on this holy hill
605 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold
At my right hand; your head I him appoint;
♦ And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow
S135 All knees in Heaven, and shall confess him Lord.
Under his great vice-gerent reign abide
610 United, as one individual soul,
For ever happy. Him who disobeys,
Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day,
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls
Into utter darkness, deep engulfed, his place
615 Ordained without redemption, without end.”
“So spake the Omnipotent, and with his words
All seemed well pleased; all seemed, but were not all.
That day, as other solemn days, they spent
In song and dance about the sacred hill;
620 Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere
Of planets, and of fixed, in all her wheels
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,
F138 Eccentrick, intervolved, yet regular
Then most, when most irregular they seem;
625 And in their motions harmony divine
L2[O] So smooths her charming tones, that God’s own ear
C Listens delighted. Evening now approached,
(For we have also our evening and our morn,
We ours for change delectable, not need)
630 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn
Desirous; all in circles as they stood,
Tables are set, and on a sudden piled
With Angels’ food, and rubied nectar flows
In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold,
635 Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven.
On flowers reposed, and with fresh flowerets crowned,
They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet
Quaff immortality and joy, secure
Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds
640 Excess, before the all-bounteous King, who showered
With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy.
S136 “Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhaled
From that high mount of God, whence light and shade
Spring both, the face of brightest Heaven had changed
645 To grateful twilight (for night comes not there
In darker veil) and roseat dewes disposed
All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest;
Wide over all the plain, and wider far
Than all this globous Earth in plain outspread,
5.650 (Such are the courts of God) the angelick throng,

48 (36C)

7 (6C)

7

51

Thus when with meats and drinks they had sufficed,
Not burdened nature, sudden mind arose
Milton In Adam, not to let the occasion pass,
Paradise Given him by this great conference to know
Lost Of things above his world, and of their being
455 Who dwell in Heaven, whose excellence he saw
Transcend his own so far; whose radiant forms,
Divine effulgence, whose high power, so far
Exceeded human; and his wary speech
Thus to the empyreal minister he framed:
460 “Inhabitant with God, now know I well
Thy favour, in this honour done to Man;
Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsafed
F133 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,
465 Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,
As that more willingly thou couldst not seem
At Heaven’s high feasts to have fed: yet what compare!”
To whom the winged Hierarch replied:
“O Adam, One Almighty is, from whom
470 All things proceed, and up to him return,
If not depraved from good, created all
Such to perfection, one first matter all,
S131 Endued with various forms, various degrees
Of substance, and, in things that live, of life;
But more refined, more spiritous, and pure,
475 As nearer to him placed, or nearer tending
L2[O] Each in their several active spheres assigned,
C Till body up to spirit work, in bounds
Proportioned to each kind. So from the root
480 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
More aery, last the bright consummate flower
Spirits odorous breathes: flowers and their fruit,
Man’s nourishment, by gradual scale sublimed,
To vital spirits aspire, to animal,
485 To intellectual; give both life and sense,
Fancy and understanding; whence the soul
Reason receives, and reason is her being,
Discursive, or intuitive; discourse
Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
490 Differing but in degree, of kind the same.
Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
If I refuse not, but convert, as you
To proper substance. Time may come, when Men
With Angels may participate, and find
F134 No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare;
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,
Improved by tract of time, and, winged, ascend
Ethereal, as we; or may, at choice,
5.500 Here or in heavenly Paradises dwell;

If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire,
 Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happy state
 505 Can comprehend, incapable of more.”
 S132 To whom the patriarch of mankind replied:
 ♦ “O favourable Spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
 510 From center to circumference; whereon,
 In contemplation of created things,
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,
 What meant that caution joined, If ye be found
 Obedient? Can we want obedience then
 515 To him, or possibly his love desert,
 Who formed us from the dust and placed us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?”
 To whom the Angel: “Son of Heaven and Earth,
 520 Attend! That thou art happy, owe to God;
 That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.
 This was that caution given thee; be advised.
 God made thee perfect, not immutable;
 525 And good he made thee, but to persevere
 L2[I] He left it in thy power; ordained thy will
 C F135 By nature free, not over-ruled by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity.
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 530 Not our necessitated; such with him
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other choose?
 535 Myself, and all the angelick host, that stand
 In sight of God, enthroned, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
 On other surety none; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 540 S133 To love or not; in this we stand or fall:
 And some are fallen, to disobedience fallen,
 And so from Heaven to deepest Hell; O fall
 From what high state of bliss, into what woe!”
 To whom our great progenitor: “Thy words
 545 Attentive, and with more delighted ear,
 Milton Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Paradise Cherubick songs by night from neighbouring hills
 Lost Aereal musick send: Nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free;
 5.550 Yet that we never shall forget to love

49 (37C)

8 (7C)

8

52

Our Maker, and obey him whose command
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assured me, and still assure; Though what thou tellest
 Hath passed in Heaven, some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 555
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard;
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun
 Hath finished half his journey, and scarce begins F136
 His other half in the great zone of Heaven.” vv 1/3 560
 Thus Adam made request; and Raphael,
 After short pause assenting, thus began:
 “High matter thou enjoimest me, O prime of men,
 Sad task and hard; for how shall I relate
 To human sense the invisible exploits 565
 Of warring Spirits? how, without remorse,
 The ruin of so many glorious once
 And perfect while they stood? how last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps
 Not lawful to reveal? yet for thy good 570
 This is dispensed; and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
 By likening spiritual to corporal forms,
 As may express them best; though what if Earth S134
 Be but a shadow of Heaven, and things therein 575
 Each to other like, more than on Earth is thought? L2[I]
 “As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild C
 Reign'd where these Heavens now roll, where Earth now rests
 Upon her center poised; when on a day
 (For time, though in eternity, applied 580
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future,) on such day
 As Heaven's great year brings forth, the empyreal host
 Of Angels by imperial summons called,
 Innumerable before the Almighty's throne 585
 Forthwith, from all the ends of Heaven, appeared
 Under their Hierarchs in orders bright.
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanced,
 Standards and gonfalons 'twixt van and rear
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590
 Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees; F137
 Or in their glittering tissues bear emblazed
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood, 595
 Orb within orb, the Father Infinite, Milton
 By whom in bliss imbosomed sat the Son, Paradise
 Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top Lost
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake:
 “Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light, 5.600

Milton Nor number, nor example, with him wrought
Paradise To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,
Lost Though single. From amidst them forth he passed,
S144 Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustained
905 Superiour, nor of violence feared aught;
 And, with retorted scorn, his back he turned
5.907 ♦ On those proud towers to swift destruction doomed.
S146 6.1 **A** LL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued,
F147 Through Heaven's wide champain held his way; till Morn,
 Waked by the circling Hours, with rosy hand
 Unbarred the gates of light. There is a cave
5 Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,
 Where light and darkness in perpetual round
 Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heaven
 Grateful vicissitude, like day and night;
 Light issues forth, and at the other door
10 Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour
 To veil the Heaven, though darkness there might well
 Seem twilight here. And now went forth the Morn
 Such as in highest Heaven arrayed in gold
 Empyrean; from before her vanished Night,
F148 Shot through with orient beams; when all the plain
 Covered with thick embattled squadrons bright,
 Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:
L1[O] War he perceived, war in procinct; and found
D 20 Already known what he for news had thought
 To have reported; gladly then he mixed
 Among those friendly Powers, who him received
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one,
 That of so many myriads fallen, yet one
25 Returned not lost. On to the sacred hill
 They led him high applauded, and present
 Before the seat supreme; from whence a voice,
 From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard:
 "Servant of God, well done; well hast thou fought
30 The better fight, who single hast maintained
 Against revolted multitudes the cause
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms;
 And for the testimony of truth hast borne
S147 Universal reproach, far worse to bear
35 Than violence; for this was all thy care
 To stand approved in sight of God, though worlds
 Judged thee perverse. The easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return,
40 Than scorned thou didst depart, and to subdue
 By force, who reason for their law refuse,
 Right reason for their law, and for their King
6.43 Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.
 Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,

50 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,
 And all the sea, from one entire globose
 Stretched into longitude; which having passed,
 At length into the limits of the North
 They came; and Satan to his royal seat
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount
 Raised on a mount, with pyramids and towers
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold;
 The palace of great Lucifer (so call
760 That structure in the dialect of men
 Interpreted) which not long after, he
 Affecting all equality with God,
 In imitation of that mount whereon
 Messiah was declared in sight of Heaven,
765 The Mountain of the Congregation called;
 For thither he assembled all his train,
 Pretending so commanded to consult
 About the great reception of their King,
 Thither to come, and with calumnious art
770 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.
 "Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers;
 If these magnifick titles yet remain
 Not merely titular, since by decree
S140 Another now hath to himself engrossed
775 All power, and us eclipsed under the name
L1[O] Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
D Of midnight-march, and hurried meeting here,
 This only to consult how we may best,
 With what may be devised of honours new,
780 Receive him coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile!
 Too much to one! but double how endured,
 To one, and to his image now proclaimed?
 But what if better counsels might erect
785 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?
F143 Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend
 The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust
9 To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves
 Natives and sons of Heaven possessed before
790 By none; and if not equal all, yet free,
 Equally free; for orders and degrees
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.
 Who can in reason then, or right, assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right
795 His equals, if in power and splendour less,
 In freedom equal? or can introduce
 Law and edict on us, who without law
 Err not? much less for this to be our Lord,
 And look for adoration, to the abuse
5.800

Of those imperial titles, which assert
Our being ordained to govern, not to serve.”
“Thus far his bold discourse without controul
Had audience; when among the Seraphim
805 Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal adored
The Deity, and divine commands obeyed,
S141 ♦ Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe
The current of his fury thus opposed:
“O argument blasphemous, false, and proud!
810 Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven
Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,
In place thyself so high above thy peers.
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn
The just decree of God, pronounced and sworn,
815 That to his only Son, by right endued
With regal scepter, every soul in Heaven
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
F144 Confess him rightful King? Unjust, thou sayest,
Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,
820 And equal over equals to let reign,
One over all with unsucceeded power.
Shalt thou give law to God? shalt thou dispute
With him the points of liberty, who made
Thee what thou art, and formed the Powers of Heaven
825 Such as he pleased, and circumscribed their being?
L1[I] Yet, by experience taught, we know how good,
D And of our good and of our dignity
How provident he is; how far from thought
To make us less, bent rather to exalt
830 Our happy state, under one head more near
United. But to grant it thee unjust,
That equal over equals monarch reign:
Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count,
Or all angelick nature joined in one,
835 Equal to him, begotten Son? by whom,
As by his Word, the Mighty Father made
All things, even thee; and all the Spirits of Heaven
By him created in their bright degrees,
Crowned them with glory, and to their glory named
840 S142 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
Essential Powers; nor by his reign obscured,
But more illustrious made; since he the head
One of our number thus reduced becomes;
His laws our laws; all honour to him done
845 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,
Milton And tempt not these; but hasten to appease
Paradise The incensed Father, and the incensed Son,
Lost While pardon may be found in time besought.”
“So spake the fervent Angel; but his zeal
5.850 F145 None seconded, as out of season judged,

51 (38C)

10 (8C)

10

54

Or singular and rash, whereat rejoiced
The Apostate, and, more haughty, thus replied:
“That we were formed then sayest thou? and the work
Of secondary hands, by task transferred
From Father to his Son? strange point and new! 855
Doctrine which we would know whence learned: who saw
When this creation was? rememberest thou
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
We know no time when we were not as now;
Know none before us, self-begot, self-raised 860
By our own quickening power, when fatal course
Had circled his full orb, the birth mature
Of this our native Heaven, ethereal sons.
Our puissance is our own; our own right hand
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 865
Who is our equal: Then thou shalt behold
Whether by supplication we intend
Address, and to begirt the almighty throne
Beseeching or besieging. This report,
These tidings carry to the anointed King; 870
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.”
“He said; and, as the sound of waters deep, S143
Hoarse murmur echoed to his words applause
Through the infinite host; nor less for that
The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone 875
Encompassed round with foes, thus answered bold: L1[I]
D “O alienate from God, O Spirit accursed,
Forsaken of all good! I see thy fall
Determined, and thy hapless crew involved
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 880
Both of thy crime and punishment: Henceforth
No more be troubled how to quit the yoke F146
Of God’s Messiah; those indulgent laws
Will not be now vouchsafed; other decrees
Against thee are gone forth without recall; 885
That golden scepter, which thou didst reject,
Is now an iron rod to bruise and break
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise;
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 890
Impendent, raging into sudden flame,
Distinguish not; for soon expect to feel
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
Then who created thee lamenting learn,
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.” 895
“So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found Milton
Among the faithless, faithful only he; Paradise
Among innumerable false, unmoved, Lost
Unshaken, unseduced, untterrified,
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal; 5.900

Milton Idol of majesty divine, enclosed
 S149 With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields;
 Paradise Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now
 Lost 'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,
 105 A dreadful interval, and front to front
 Presented stood in terrible array
 Of hideous length: Before the cloudy van,
 On the rough edge of battle ere it joined,
 Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanced,
 110 Came towering, armed in adamant and gold.
 F151 Abdiel that sight endured not, where he stood
 ♦ Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.
 "O Heaven! that such resemblance of the Highest
 115 Should yet remain, where faith and realty
 Remain not: Wherefore should not strength and might
 There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove
 Where boldest, though to fight unconquerable?
 ^^8K His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,
 120 I mean to try, whose reason I have tried
 Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,
 That he, who in debate of truth hath won,
 Should win in arms, in both disputes alike
 Victor; though brutish that contest and foul,
 125 When reason hath to deal with force, yet so
 L1[O] Most reason is that reason overcome.
 A "So pondering, and from his armed peers
 Forth stepping opposite, half-way he met
 His daring foe, at this prevention more
 130 Incensed, and thus securely him defied:
 "Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reached
 The highth of thy aspiring unopposed,
 The throne of God unguarded, and his side
 Abandoned, at the terrour of thy power
 135 Or potent tongue: Fool! not to think how vain
 S150 Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms;
 Who out of smallest things could, without end,
 Have raised incessant armies to defeat
 Thy folly; or with solitary hand
 140 Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow,
 Unaided, could have finished thee, and whelmed
 Thy legions under darkness: But thou seest
 F152 All are not of thy train; there be, who faith
 Prefer, and piety to God, though then
 145 To thee not visible, when I alone
 Seemed in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all: my sect thou seest. Now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err."
 "Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askance,
 6.150 Thus answered: 'TII for thee, but in wished hour

52

- F#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 First Edition (in 10 books)
 printed by Peter Parker (1667).
 The First Edition does not
 number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 Second Edition (in 12 books)
 printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
 of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
 IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 6



EPIC POEM

.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
 A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
 WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
 copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG  912 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
 Book 7

A 1L 1 - 150
 B 3L 151 - 750
 C 1L 751 - 912

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
 2-SIDED:
 55 to 64

S146		ALL night the dreadful Angel, unpursued,	53 (39C)	Fearless assault; and, to the brow of Heaven	
F147	A	Through Heaven's wide champain held his way; till Morn,		Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss,	
		Waked by the circling Hours, with rosy hand		Into their place of punishment, the gulf	
5		Unbarred the gates of light. There is a cave		Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide	
		Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,		His fiery Chaos to receive their fall."	55
		Where light and darkness in perpetual round		"So spake the Sovran Voice, and clouds began	
		Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heaven		To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll	
		Grateful vicissitude, like day and night;		In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign	
		Light issues forth, and at the other door		Of wrath awaked; nor with less dread the loud	
10		Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour		Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow:	60
		To veil the Heaven, though darkness there might well		At which command the Powers militant,	
♦		Seem twilight here. And now went forth the Morn		That stood for Heaven, in mighty quadrate joined	
		Such as in highest Heaven arrayed in gold		Of union irresistible, moved on	
		Empyrean; from before her vanished Night,		In silence their bright legions, to the sound	
F148		Shot through with orient beams; when all the plain		Of instrumental harmony, that breathed	65
		Covered with thick embattled squadrons bright,		Heroick ardour to adventurous deeds	
		Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,		Under their God-like leaders, in the cause	
		Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:		Of God and his Messiah. On they move	S148
		War he perceived, war in procinct; and found		Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,	
20		Already known what he for news had thought		Nor straitening vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides	70
		To have reported; gladly then he mixed		Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground	
		Among those friendly Powers, who him received		Their march was, and the passive air up-bore	
		With joy and acclamations loud, that one,		Their nimble tread; as when the total kind	
		That of so many myriads fallen, yet one		Of birds, in orderly array on wing,	
25		Returned not lost. On to the sacred hill		Came summoned over Eden to receive	75
L1[I]		They led him high applauded, and present		Their names of thee; so over many a tract	L1[I]
A		Before the seat supreme; from whence a voice,		Of Heaven they marched, and many a province wide,	A
		From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard:		Tenfold the length of this terrene: At last,	
		"Servant of God, well done; well hast thou fought		Far in the horizon to the north appeared	F150
30		The better fight, who single hast maintained		From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretched	80
		Against revolted multitudes the cause		In battailous aspect, and nearer view	
		Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms;	2 (1C)	Bristled with upright beams innumerable	
		And for the testimony of truth hast borne		Of rigid spears, and helmets thronged, and shields	
S147		Universal reproach, far worse to bear		Various, with boastful argument portrayed,	
35		Than violence; for this was all thy care		The banded Powers of Satan hasting on	85
		To stand approved in sight of God, though worlds		With furious expedition; for they weened	
		Judged thee perverse. The easier conquest now		That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,	
		Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,		To win the mount of God, and on his throne	
		Back on thy foes more glorious to return,	2	To set the Envier of his state, the proud	
40		Than scorned thou didst depart, and to subdue		Aspirer; but their thoughts proved fond and vain	90
		By force, who reason for their law refuse,		In the mid way. Though strange to us it seemed	
		Right reason for their law, and for their King		At first, that Angel should with Angel war,	
		Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.		And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet	
		Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,		So oft in festivals of joy and love	
45		And thou, in military prowess next,		Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire,	95
Milton		Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons		Hymning the Eternal Father: But the shout	Milton
F149		Invincible; lead forth my armed Saints,		Of battle now began, and rushing sound	Paradise
Paradise		By thousands and by millions, ranged for fight,		Of onset ended soon each milder thought.	Lost
Lost ^6K		Equal in number to that Godless crew		"High in the midst, exalted as a God,	
6.50		Rebellious; them with fire and hostile arms	56	The Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,	6.100

Have suffered, that the glory may be thine
Milton Of ending this great war, since none but Thou
Paradise Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace
Lost Immense I have transfused, that all may know
705 In Heaven and Hell thy power above compare;
And, this perverse commotion governed thus,
To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir
Of all things, to be Heir and to be King
By sacred unction, thy deserved right.
710 Go then, thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might;
Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels
♦ That shake Heaven's basis, bring forth all my war,
My bow and thunder, my almighty arms
S167 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;
715 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out
From all Heaven's bounds into the utter deep:
There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
God, and Messiah his anointed King."
F170 He said, and on his Son with rays direct
720 Shone full; he all his Father full expressed
Ineffably into his face received;
And thus the Filial Godhead answering spake.
"O Father, O Supreme of heavenly Thrones,
First, Highest, Holiest, Best; thou always seek'st
725 To glorify thy Son, I always thee,
L1[O] As is most just. This I my glory account,
B My exaltation, and my whole delight,
That thou, in me well pleased, declarest thy will
Fulfilled, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
730 Sceptre and power, thy giving, I assume,
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee
For ever; and in me all whom thou lovest:
But whom thou hatest, I hate, and can put on
735 Thy terrours, as I put thy mildness on,
Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
Armed with thy might, rid Heaven of these rebelled;
To their prepared ill mansion driven down,
To chains of darkness, and the undying worm;
740 That from thy just obedience could revolt,
Whom to obey is happiness entire.
Then shall thy Saints unmixed, and from the impure
Far separate, circling thy holy mount,
Unfeigned Halleluiahs to thee sing,
745 Hymns of high praise, and I among them Chief."
So said, he, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose
From the right hand of Glory where he sat;
S168 And the third sacred morn began to shine,
Dawning through Heaven. Forth rushed with whirlwind sound
6.750 The chariot of Paternal Deity,

54 (40C)

3 (2C)

3

57

Of my revenge, first sought for, thou returnest
From flight, seditious Angel! to receive
Milton Thy merited reward, the first assay
Paradise Of this right hand provoked, since first that tongue,
Lost Inspired with contradiction, durst oppose
155 A third part of the Gods, in synod met
Their deities to assert; who, while they feel
Vigour divine within them, can allow
Omnipotence to none. But well thou comest
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win
160 From me some plume, that thy success may show
Destruction to the rest. This pause between,
(Unanswered lest thou boast) to let thee know,
At first I thought that Liberty and Heaven
To heavenly souls had been all one; but now
165 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
Ministring Spirits, trained up in feast and song.
Such hast thou armed, the minstrelsy of Heaven,
Servility with freedom to contend,
As both their deeds compared this day shall prove." **S151** 170
To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied:
"Apostate! still thou errest, nor end wilt find
Of erring, from the path of truth remote.
Unjustly thou depravest it with the name
Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains,
F153 Or Nature: God and Nature bid the same,
L1[O] When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
B Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebelled
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,
180 Thyself not free, but to thyself enthralled;
Yet lewdly darest our ministring upbraid.
Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom; let me serve
In Heaven God ever blest, and his divine
Behests obey, worthiest to be obeyed.
185 Yet chains in Hell, not realms, expect; meanwhile
From me returned, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
This greeting on thy impious crest receive."
So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell
190 On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,
Such ruin intercept: Ten paces huge
He back recoiled; the tenth on bended knee
His massy spear upstaid; as if on earth
195 Winds underground, or waters forcing way,
Sidelong had pushed a mountain from his seat,
Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seised
The rebel Thrones, but greater rage, to see
Thus foiled their mightiest; ours joy filled, and shout, **6.200**

Presage of victory, and fierce desire
 Of battle; whereat Michael bid sound
 The Arch-Angel trumpet. Through the vast of Heaven
S152 It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
 205 Hosanna to the Highest; nor stood at gaze
 The adverse legions, nor less hideous joined
F154 The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
 And clamour such as heard in Heaven till now
 Was never; arms on armour clashing brayed
 210 Horrible discord, and the madding wheels
 Of brazen chariots raged; dire was the noise
 ♦ Of conflict; overhead the dismal hiss
 Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,
 And flying vaulted either host with fire.
 215 So under fiery cope together rushed
 Both battles main, with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage. All Heaven
 Resounded; and had Earth been then, all Earth
 Had to her center shook. What wonder? when
 220 Millions of fierce encountering Angels fought
 On either side, the least of whom could wield
 These elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their regions: How much more of power
 Army against army numberless to raise
 225 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,
L1[I] Though not destroy, their happy native seat!
B Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent,
 From his strong hold of Heaven, high over-ruled
 And limited their might; though numbered such
 230 As each divided legion might have seemed
 A numerous host; in strength each armed hand
 A legion; led in fight, yet leader seemed
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 235 Of battle, open when, and when to close
 The ridges of grim war: No thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
S153 That argued fear; each on himself relied,
F155 As only in his arm the moment lay
 240 Of victory: Deeds of eternal fame
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread
 That war and various; sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the air; all air seemed then
 245 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale
Milton The battle hung; till Satan, who that day
Paradise Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms
Lost No equal, ranging through the dire attack
 Of fighting Seraphim confused, at length
 6.250 Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and felled

55 (41C)

4 (3C)

4

58

They saw them whelmed, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep;
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
 Main promontories flung, which in the air
 Came shadowing, and oppressed whole legions armed. **F168**
 Their armour helped their harm, crushed in and bruised
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan;
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light, 660
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest, in imitation, to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore:
 So hills amid the air encountered hills,
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire; 665
 That underground they fought in dismal shade;
 Infernal noise! war seemed a civil game
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heaped
 Upon confusion rose. And now all Heaven
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread; 670
 Had not the Almighty Father, where he sits
 Shrined in his sanctuary of Heaven secure,
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
 This tumult, and permitted all, advised,
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil, 675
 To honour his anointed Son avenged **L1[I]**
 Upon his enemies, and to declare **B**
 All power on him transferred. Whence to his Son,
 The Assessor of his throne, he thus began:
 "Effulgence of my glory, Son beloved, **S166** 680
 Son, in whose face invisible is beheld
 Visibly, what by Deity I am;
 And in whose hand what by decree I do,
 Second Omnipotence! two days are past,
 Two days, as we compute the days of Heaven, 685
 Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame
 These disobedient. Sore hath been their fight, **F169**
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met armed;
 For to themselves I left them; and thou knowest,
 Equal in their creation they were formed, 690
 Save what sin hath impaired; which yet hath wrought
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom;
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
 Endless, and no solution will be found.
 War wearied hath performed what war can do, 695
 And to disordered rage let loose the reins **Milton**
 With mountains, as with weapons, armed; which makes **Paradise**
 Wild work in Heaven, and dangerous to the main. **Lost**
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine;
 For thee I have ordained it; and thus far 6.700

	Repeated, and indecent overthrow	56 (42C)	Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway	
Milton	Doubled, would render them yet more despised,		Brandished aloft, the horrid edge came down	Milton
Paradise	And to their foes a laughter; for in view		Wide-wasting; such destruction to withstand	Paradise
Lost	Stood ranked of Seraphim another row,		He hasted, and opposed the rocky orb	Lost
605	In posture to displode their second tire		Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,	255
	Of thunder: Back defeated to return		A vast circumference. At his approach	
	They worse abhorred. Satan beheld their plight,		The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toil	
	And to his mates thus in derision called:		Surceased, and glad, as hoping here to end	
	“O Friends! why come not on these victors proud		Intestine war in Heaven, the arch-foe subdued	
610	Erewhile they fierce were coming; and when we,		Or captive dragged in chains, with hostile frown	260
	To entertain them fair with open front		And visage all inflamed first thus began:	
S164 ♦	And breast (what could we more?) propounded terms		“Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,	
	Of composition, straight they changed their minds,		Unnamed in Heaven, now plenteous as thou seest	
	Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,		These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,	
615	As they would dance; yet for a dance they seemed		Though heaviest by just measure on thyself,	265
	Somewhat extravagant and wild; perhaps		And thy adherents; How hast thou disturbed	
	For joy of offered peace. But I suppose,		Heaven’s blessed peace, and into nature brought	
	If our proposals once again were heard,		Misery, uncreated till the crime	
	We should compel them to a quick result.”		Of thy rebellion! how hast thou instilled	
620	To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood:		Thy malice into thousands, once upright	270
	“Leader! the terms we sent were terms of weight,		And faithful, now proved false! But think not here	F156
	Of hard contents, and full of force urged home;		To trouble holy rest; Heaven casts thee out	S154
F167	Such as we might perceive amused them all,		From all her confines. Heaven, the seat of bliss,	
	And stumbled many. Who receives them right,		Brooks not the works of violence and war.	
625	Had need from head to foot well understand;		Hence then, and evil go with thee along,	275
L2[O]	Not understood, this gift they have besides,		Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell;	L2[O]
B	They show us when our foes walk not upright.”		Thou and thy wicked crew! there mingle broils,	B
	So they among themselves in pleasant vein		Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,	
	Stood scoffing, hightened in their thoughts beyond		Or some more sudden vengeance, winged from God,	
630	All doubt of victory: Eternal Might		Precipitate thee with augmented pain.”	280
	To match with their inventions they presumed		“So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus	
	So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,	5 (4C)	The Adversary: ‘Nor think thou with wind	
	And all his host derided, while they stood		Of aery threats to awe whom yet with deeds	
	A while in trouble. But they stood not long;		Thou canst not. Hast thou turned the least of these	
635	Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms		To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise	285
	Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.		Unvanquished, easier to transact with me	
	Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,		That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats	
	Which God hath in his mighty Angels placed!)		To chase me hence? err not, that so shall end	
	Their arms away they threw, and to the hills	5	The strife which thou callest evil, but we style	
640	(For Earth hath this variety from Heaven		The strife of glory; which we mean to win,	290
	Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)		Or turn this Heaven itself into the Hell	
	Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew;		Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,	
	From their foundations loosening to and fro,		If not to reign: Meanwhile thy utmost force,	
	They plucked the seated hills, with all their load,		And join him named Almighty to thy aid,	
645	Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops		I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.’	295
S165	Up-lifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,		“They ended parle, and both addressed for fight	
	Be sure, and terroure, seized the rebel host,		Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue	
	When coming towards them so dread they saw		Of Angels, can relate, or to what things	
	The bottom of the mountains upward turned;		Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift	
6.650	Till on those cursed engines’ triple-row	59	Human imagination to such highth	6.300

	Of Godlike power? for likest Gods they seemed,	57 (43C)	Not distant far with heavy pace the foe	
	Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,		Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube	
F157	Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.		Training his devilish enginery, impaled	
	Now waved their fiery swords, and in the air		On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,	
305	Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields		To hide the fraud. At interview both stood	555
S155	Blazed opposite, while Expectation stood		Awhile; but suddenly at head appeared	
	In horror: From each hand with speed retired,		Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud:	
	Where erst was thickest fight, the angelick throng,		“Vanguard, to right and left! the front unfold!	
	And left large field, unsafe within the wind		That all may see who hate us, how we seek	F165
310	Of such commotion; such as, to set forth		Peace and composure, and with open breast	560
♦	Great things by small, if, nature’s concord broke,		Stand ready to receive them, if they like	
	Among the constellations war were sprung,		Our overture; and turn not back perverse:	
	Two planets, rushing from aspect malign		But that I doubt; however witness, Heaven!	
	Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky		Heaven, witness thou anon! while we discharge	
315	Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.		Freely our part: ye, who appointed stand	565
	Together both with next to almighty arm		Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch	
	Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aimed		What we propound, and loud that all may hear!’	
	That might determine, and not need repeat,		“So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce	
	As not of power at once; nor odds appeared		Had ended; when to right and left the front	
320	In might or swift prevention: But the sword		Divided, and to either flank retired;	570
	Of Michael from the armoury of God		Which to our eyes discovered, new and strange,	
	Was given him tempered so, that neither keen		A triple mounted row of pillars laid	
	Nor solid might resist that edge: it met		On wheels (for like to pillars most they seemed,	
	The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite		Or hollowed bodies made of oak or fir,	
325	Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor staid,		With branches lopt, in wood or mountain felled)	575
L2[I]	But with swift wheel reverse, deep entering, shared		Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths	L2[I]
B	All his right side: Then Satan first knew pain,		With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,	B
	And writhed him to and fro convolved; so sore		Portending hollow truce. At each behind	S163
	The griding sword with discontinuous wound		A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed	
330	Passed through him: But the ethereal substance closed,		Stood waving tipt with fire; while we, suspense,	580
	Not long divisible; and from the gash		Collected stood within our thoughts amused,	
	A stream of necturous humour issuing flowed	6 (5C)	Not long; for sudden all at once their reeds	
	Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,		Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied	
	And all his armour stained, ere while so bright.		With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,	
F158	Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run		But soon obscured with smoke, all Heaven appeared,	585
	By Angels many and strong, who interposed		From those deep-throated engines belched, whose roar	
	Defence, while others bore him on their shields		Embowelled with outrageous noise the air,	
	Back to his chariot, where it stood retired		And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul	
	From off the files of war; there they him laid	6	Their devilish glut, chained thunderbolts and hail	
340 S156	Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame,		Of iron globes; which, on the victor host	590
	To find himself not matchless, and his pride		Levelled, with such impetuous fury smote,	F166
	Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath		That whom they hit none on their feet might stand,	
	His confidence to equal God in power.		Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell	
	Yet soon he healed; for Spirits that live throughout		By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rolled;	
345	Vital in every part, not as frail man		The sooner for their arms; unarmed, they might	595
Milton	In entrails, heart of head, liver or reins,		Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift	Milton
Paradise	Cannot but by annihilating die;		By quick contraction or remove; but now	Paradise
Lost	Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound		Foul dissipation followed, and forced rout;	Lost
	Receive, no more than can the fluid air.		Nor served it to relax their serried files.	
6.350	All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,	60	What should they do? If on they rushed, repulse	6.600

Impossible: Yet, haply, of thy race
Milton In future days, if malice should abound,
Paradise Some one intent on mischief, or inspired
Lost With devilish machination, might devise
505 Like instrument to plague the sons of men
For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
“Forthwith from council to the work they flew;
None arguing stood; innumerable hands
Were ready; in a moment up they turned
510 **S161** With the celestial soil, and saw beneath
The originals of nature in their crude
♦ Conception; sulphurous and nitrous foam
They found, they mingled, and, with subtle art,
Concocted and adusted they reduced
515 To blackest grain, and into store conveyed.
Part hidden veins digged up (nor hath this Earth
Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,
Whereof to found their engines and their balls
Of missive ruin; part incentive reed
520 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.
So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,
Secret they finished, and in order set,
With silent circumspection, unespied.
“Now when fair morn orient in Heaven appeared,
525 Up rose the victor Angels, and to arms
L3[O] The matin trumpet sung: in arms they stood
B F164 Of golden panoply, refulgent host,
Soon banded; others from the dawning hills
Look round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,
530 Each quarter to descry the distant foe,
Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,
In motion or in halt: Him soon they met
Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
But firm battalion; back with speediest sail
535 Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,
Came flying, and in mid-air aloud thus cried:
“Arm, Warriours, arm for fight; the foe at hand,
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
This day; fear not his flight; so thick a cloud
540 He comes, and settled in his face I see
Sad resolution, and secure. Let each
His adamantine coat gird well, and each
Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orbéd shield,
S162 Borne even or high; for this day will pour down,
545 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower,
But rattling storm of arrows barbed with fire.’
“So warned he them, aware themselves, and soon
In order, quit of all impediment;
Instant without disturb they took alarm,
6.550 And onward moved embattled: When behold!

58 (44c)

7 (6c)

7

61

All intellect, all sense; and as they please,
They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare. **Milton**
“Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deserved **Paradise**
Lost Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought, **Lost**
355 And with fierce ensigns pierced the deep array
Of Moloch, furious king; who him defied,
And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound
Threatened, nor from the Holy One of Heaven
Refrained his tongue blasphemous; but anon **360**
Down cloven to the waist, with shattered arms
And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
Uriel, and Raphael, his vaunting foe,
Though huge, and in a rock of diamond armed,
Vanquished Adramelech and Asmadai, **365**
Two potent Thrones, that to be less than Gods
Disdained, but meaner thoughts learned in their flight, **F159**
Mangled with ghastly wounds through plate and mail.
Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy
370 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow
Ariel, and Arioch, and the violence
Of Ramiel scorched and blasted, overthrew.
I might relate of thousands, and their names
Eternize here on earth; but those elect **S157**
Angels, contented with their fame in Heaven, **375**
Seek not the praise of men: the other sort, **L3[O]**
B In might though wonderous and in acts of war,
Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom
Cancelled from Heaven and sacred memory,
380 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell;
For strength from truth divided, and from just,
Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise
And ignominy; yet to glory aspires
Vainglorious, and through infamy seeks fame:
Therefore eternal silence be their doom. **385**
“And now, their mightiest quelled, the battle swerved,
With many an inroad gored; deformed rout
Entered, and foul disorder; all the ground
With shivered armour strown, and on a heap
390 Chariot and charioteer lay overturned,
And fiery foaming steeds; what stood, recoiled
O’er-wearied, through the faint Satanick host
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surprised,
Then first with fear surprised, and sense of pain,
395 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought
By sin of disobedience; till that hour
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.
Far otherwise the inviolable Saints,
In cubick phalanx firm, advanced entire, **F160**
Invulnerable, impenetrably armed; **6.400**

	Such high advantages their innocence Gave them above their foes; not to have sinned, Not to have disobeyed; in fight they stood Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pained	59 (45c)	"Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard For Gods, and too unequal work, we find, Against unequal arms to fight in pain, Against unpained, impassive; from which evil Ruin must needs ensue. For what avails Valour or strength, though matchless, quelled with pain Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, But live content, which is the calmest life: But pain is perfect misery, the worst Of evils, and, excessive, overturns All patience. He, who therefore can invent With what more forcible we may offend Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves No less than for deliverance what we owe." "Whereto with look composed Satan replied: 'Not uninvented that, which thou aright Believest so main to our success, I bring. Which of us who beholds the bright surface Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand, This continent of spacious Heaven, adorned With plant, fruit, flower ambrosial, gems, and gold; Whose eye so superficially surveys These things, as not to mind from whence they grow Deep under ground, materials dark and crude, Of spiritous and fiery spume, till touched With Heaven's ray, and tempered, they shoot forth So beauteous, opening to the ambient light? These in their dark nativity the deep Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame; Which, into hollow engines, long and round, Thick rammed, at the other bore with touch of fire Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth From far, with thundering noise, among our foes Such implements of mischief, as shall dash To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarmed The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt. Nor long shall be our labour; yet ere dawn, Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive; Abandon fear; to strength and counsel joined Think nothing hard, much less to be despaired.' "He ended, and his words their drooping cheer Enlightened, and their languished hope revived. The invention all admired, and each, how he To be the inventor missed; so easy it seemed Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought	455
405	By wound, though from their place by violence moved, "Now Night her course began, and, over Heaven Inducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,			
S158	And silence on the odious din of war: Under her cloudy covert both retired,			
410	Victor and vanquished: On the foughthen field Michael and his Angels prevalent			460
♦	Encamping, placed in guard their watches round, Cherubick waving fires; on the other part, Satan with his rebellious disappeared,			F162
415	Far in the dark dislodged; and, void of rest, His potentates to council called by night; And in the midst thus undismayed began: "O now in danger tried, now known in arms Not to be overpowered, companions dear,			465
420	Found worthy not of liberty alone, Too mean pretence, but what we more affect, Honour, dominion, glory, and renown, Who have sustained one day in doubtful fight, (And if one day, why not eternal days?)			
425	What Heaven's Lord had powerfullest to send			475
L3[I]	Against us from about his throne, and judged			S160 L3[I]
B	Sufficient to subdue us to his will, But proves not so; then fallible, it seems, Of future we may deem him, though till now			B
430	Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly armed,			480
F161	Some disadvantage we endured and pain, Till now not known, but known, as soon contemned; Since now we find this our empyreal form Incapable of mortal injury,	8 (7C)		5K
435	Imperishable, and, though pierced with wound, Soon closing, and by native vigour healed. Of evil then so small as easy think The remedy. Perhaps more valid arms, Weapons more violent, when next we meet,	8		485
440	May serve to better us and worse our foes, Or equal what between us made the odds,			490
S159	In nature none: If other hidden cause Left them superiour, while we can preserve Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,			
445	Due search and consultation will disclose."			F163
Milton	"He sat; and in the assembly next upstood			Milton
Paradise	Nisroch, of Principalities the prime.			Paradise
Lost	As one he stood escaped from cruel fight, Sore toiled, his riven arms to havock hewn,			Lost
6.450	And cloudy in aspect thus answering spake:	62		6.500

Who now is plotting how he may seduce
Milton Thee also from obedience, that, with him
Paradise Bereaved of happiness, thou mayest partake
Lost His punishment, eternal misery;
905 Which would be all his solace and revenge,
As a despite done against the Most High,
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.
F176 But listen not to his temptations, warn
Thy weaker; let it profit thee to have heard,
910 By terrible example, the reward
Of disobedience. Firm they might have stood,
6.912 ♦ Yet fell; remember, and fear to transgress.”
7.1 **D**ESCEND from Heaven, Urania, by that name
If rightly thou art called, whose voice divine
Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,
Above the flight of Pegasean wing!
5 The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top
Of old Olympus dwellest; but, heavenly-born,
Before the hills appeared, or fountain flowed,
S174 Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
10 Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play
In presence of the Almighty Father, pleased
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee
Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presumed,
L1[O] An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,
C F178 Thy tempering: with like safety guided down
Return me to my native element:
Lest from this flying steed unreined (as once
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime)
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,
20 Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn.
Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound
Within the visible diurnal sphere;
Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,
More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged
25 To hoarse or mute, though fallen on evil days,
On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues;
@ In darkness, and with dangers compassed round,
And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
Visitest my slumbers nightly, or when morn
30 Purples the east. Still govern thou my song,
Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard
35 In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears
To rapture, till the savage clamour drowned
Both harp and voice; nor could the Muse defend
7.38 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores;
For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.

60

Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn, **F171**
Itself instinct with Spirit, but convoyed **Milton**
By four Cherubick shapes; four faces each **Paradise**
Had wonderful; **as with stars**, their bodies all **Lost**
And wings were set with eyes; with eyes the wheels **755**
Of beryl, and careering fires between;
Over their heads a crystal firmament,
Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure
Amber, and colours of the showery arch.
He, in celestial panoply all armed **760**
Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,
Ascended; at his right hand Victory
Sat eagle-winged; beside him hung his bow
And quiver with three-bolted thunder stored;
And from about him fierce effusion rolled **765**
Of smoke, and bickering flame, and sparkles dire: **v½**
Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,
He onward came; far off his coming shone;
And twenty thousand (I their number heard)
Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen; **770**
He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime
On the crystalline sky, in sapphire throned,
Illustrious far and wide; but by his own
First seen: Then unexpected joy surprised,
When the great ensign of Messiah blazed **775**
Aloft by Angels borne, his sign in Heaven; **L1[O]**
Under whose conduct Michael soon reduced **C**
His army, circumfused on either wing,
Under their Head imbodyed all in one.
Before him Power Divine his way prepared; **780**
At his command the uprooted hills retired
Each to his place; they heard his voice and went **S169**
Obsequious; Heaven his wonted face renewed, **F172**
And with fresh flowerets hill and valley smiled.
This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdured, **785**
And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers,
Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.
In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?
But to convince the proud what signs avail,
Or wonders move the obdurate to relent? **790**
They, hardened more by what might most reclaim,
Grieving to see his glory, at the sight
Took envy; and, aspiring to his highth,
Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud
Weening to prosper, and at length prevail **795**
Against God and Messiah, or to fall
In universal ruin last; and now
To final battle drew, disdaining flight,
Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
To all his host on either hand thus spake: **6.800**

63

“Stand still in bright array, ye Saints; here stand,
 Ye Angels armed; this day from battle rest.
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause;
 805 And as ye have received, so have ye done,
 Invincibly; but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs;
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints.
 Number to this day’s work is not ordained,
 810 Nor multitude; stand only, and behold
 God’s indignation on these godless poured
 ♦ By me; not you, but me, they have despised,
 Yet envied; against me is all their rage,
 Because the Father, to whom in Heaven s’preme
 F173 Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains,
 S170 Hath honoured me, according to his will.
 Therefore to me their doom he hath assigned;
 That they may have their wish, to try with me
 In battle which the stronger proves; they all,
 820 Or I alone against them; since by strength
 They measure all, of other excellence
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels;
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.”
 So spake the Son, and into terrour changed
 825 His countenance too severe to be beheld,
 L1[I] And full of wrath bent on his enemies.
 C At once the Four spread out their starry wings
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
 Of his fierce chariot rolled, **as with the sound**
 830 **Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host.**
 He on his impious foes right onward drove,
Gloomy as night; under his burning wheels
 The stedfast empyrean shook throughout,
 All but the throne itself of God. Full soon
 835 Among them he arrived; in his right hand
 Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent
 Before him, such as in their souls infixed
 Plagues: They, astonished, all resistance lost,
 All courage; down their idle weapons dropt:
 840 O’er shields, and helms, and helmed heads he rode
 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
 That wished the mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire.
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
 845 His arrows, from the fourfold-visaged Four
 F174 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Milton Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;
 Paradise One Spirit in them ruled; and every eye
 Lost Glared lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire
 6.850 S171 Among the accursed, that withered all their strength,

61 (46C)

10 (8C)

10

64

And of their wonted vigour left them drained,
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fallen.
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but checked
 His thunder in mid-volley; for he meant
 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven. 855
 The overthrown he raised, and **as a herd**
Of goats or timorous flock together thronged
 Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued
 With terrours, and with furies, to the bounds
 And crystal wall of Heaven; which, opening wide, 860
 Rolled inward, and a spacious gap disclosed
 Into the wasteful deep. The monstrous sight
 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse
 Urged them behind: Headlong themselves they threw
 Down from the verge of Heaven; eternal wrath 865
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.
 “Hell heard the unsufferable noise, Hell saw
 Heaven ruining from Heaven, and would have fled
 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870
 Nine days they fell; confounded Chaos roared,
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout
 Incumbered him with ruin: Hell at last
 Yawning received them whole, and on them closed; 875
 Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire L1[I]
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain. F175 C
 Disburdened Heaven rejoiced, and soon repaired
 Her mural breach, returning whence it rolled.
 Sole victor, from the expulsion of his foes, 880
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turned:
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,
 With jubilee advanced; and, as they went, S172
 Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright, 885
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion given,
 Worthiest to reign. He celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid Heaven, into the courts
 And temple of his Mighty Father throned 890
 On high; who into glory him received,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.
 “Thus, measuring things in Heaven by things on Earth,
 At thy request, and that thou mayest beware
 By what is past, to thee I have revealed 895
 What might have else to human race been hid; Milton
 The discord which befell, and war in Heaven Paradise
 Among the angelick Powers, and the deep fall Lost
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebelled
 With Satan; he who envies now thy state, 900

And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 Milton His generation, and the rising birth
 Paradise Of Nature from the unapparent Deep:
 Lost Or if the star of evening and the moon
 105 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring,
 Silence, and Sleep listening to thee will watch;
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy song
 End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.”
 Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought:
 110 And thus the Godlike Angel answered mild:
 F181 S177 “This also thy request, with caution asked,
 Obtain; though to recount almighty works
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?
 115 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve
 To glorify the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing; such commission from above
 I have received, to answer thy desire
 120 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond, abstain
 To ask; nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not revealed, which the invisible King,
 Only Omniscient, hath suppressed in night;
 To none communicable in Earth or Heaven;
 125 Enough is left besides to search and know.
 L1[O] @ But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 A Her temperance over appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain;
 Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns
 130 Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind.
 “Know then, that, after Lucifer from Heaven
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the host
 Of Angels, than that star the stars among,)
 Fell with his flaming legions through the deep
 135 Into his place, and the great Son returned
 Victorious with his Saints, the Omnipotent
 ^5K Eternal Father from his throne beheld
 Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake:
 “At least our envious Foe hath failed, who thought
 140 ♦ All like himself rebellious, by whose aid
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of Deity supreme, us dispossessed,
 F182 He trusted to have seised, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no more:
 S178 Yet far the greater part have kept, I see,
 Their station; Heaven, yet populous, retains
 Number sufficient to possess her realms
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
 With ministeries due, and solemn rites:
 7.150 But, lest his heart exalt him in the harm

62

- F#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 First Edition (in 10 books)
 printed by Peter Parker (1667).
 The First Edition does not
 number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 Second Edition (in 12 books)
 printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
 of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
 IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 7



EPIC
POEM
.ORG
DIGITAL CLASSICS

PREVIEW
Book 8

A 1L 1 - 150
 B 2L 151 - 550
 C 1L 551 - 640

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
 A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
 WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
 copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 640 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
 2-SIDED:
 65 to 72

DESCEND from Heaven, Urania, by that name
 If rightly thou art called, whose voice divine
 Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,
 Above the flight of Pegasean wing!

5 The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou
 Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top
 Of old Olympus dwellest; but, heavenly-born,
 Before the hills appeared, or fountain flowed,

S174 Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
 10 Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play
 In presence of the Almighty Father, pleased
 With thy celestial song. Up led by thee
 Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presumed,
 An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,

F178 Thy tempering: with like safety guided down
 Return me to my native element:
 Lest from this flying steed unreined (as once
 Bellerophon, though from a lower clime)
 Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,

20 Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn.
 Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound
 Within the visible diurnal sphere;
 Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,
 More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged

25 To hoarse or mute, though fallen on evil days,
 L1[I] On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues;
 A In darkness, and with dangers compassed round,
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
 Visitest my slumbers nightly, or when morn

30 Purples the east. Still govern thou my song,
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard

35 In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drowned
 Both harp and voice; nor could the Muse defend
 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores;
 For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.

40 ♦ Say, Goddess, what ensued when Raphael,
 The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarned
 Adam, by dire example, to beware

S175 Apostasy, by what befell in Heaven
 To those apostates; lest the like befall

45 In Paradise to Adam or his race,
 Milton Charged not to touch the interdicted tree,
 F179 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 Paradise So easily obeyed amid the choice
 Lost Of all tastes else to please their appetite,
 7.50 Though wandering. He, with his consorted Eve,

63 (47C)

2 (1C)

2

66

The story heard attentive, and was filled
 With admiration and deep muse, to hear
 Of things so high and strange; things, to their thought
 So unimaginable, as hate in Heaven,
 And war so near the peace of God in bliss, 55
 With such confusion: but the evil, soon
 Driven back, redounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
 With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repealed
 The doubts that in his heart arose; and now 60
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What nearer might concern him, how this world
 Of Heaven and Earth conspicuous first began;
 When, and whereof created; for what cause;
 What within Eden, or without, was done 65
 Before his memory; as one whose drouth
 Yet scarce allayed still eyes the current stream,
 Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
 Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest:
 "Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70
 Far differing from this world, thou hast revealed,
 Divine interpreter! by favour sent
 Down from the empyrean, to forewarn
 Us timely of what might else have been our loss,
 Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach; 75
 For which to the infinitely Good we owe L1[I]
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment [S176] ("174") A
 Receive, with solemn purpose to observe
 Immutably his sovran will, the end F180
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsafed 80
 Gently, for our instruction, to impart
 Things above earthly thought, which yet concerned
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seemed,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avail us known, 85
 How first began this Heaven which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorned
 Innumerable; and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient air wide interfused
 Embracing round this floried Earth; what cause 90
 Moved the Creator, in his holy rest
 Through all eternity, so late to build
 In Chaos; and the work begun, how soon
 Absolved; if unforbid thou mayest unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 95
 Of his eternal empire, but the more Milton
 To magnify his works, the more we know. Paradise
 And the great light of day yet wants to run Lost
 Much of his race though steep; suspense in Heaven,
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 7.100

First wheeled their course; Earth in her rich attire
Milton Consummate lovely smiled; air, water, earth,
Paradise By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walked,
Lost Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remained:
 505 There wanted yet the master-work, the end
 Of all yet done; a creature, who, not prone
 And brute as other creatures, but endued
 With sanctity of reason, might erect
 His stature, and upright with front serene
 510 Govern the rest, self-knowing; and from thence
 Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes
 Directed in devotion, to adore
 515 And worship God Supreme, who made him chief
 Of all his works: therefore the Omnipotent
 Eternal Father (for where is not he
 Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake:
 S189 "Let us make now Man in our image, Man
 520 In our similitude, and let them rule
 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,
 Beast of the field, and over all the Earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground."
 This said, he formed thee, Adam, thee, O Man,
 525 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breathed
 L1[O] The breath of life; in his own image he
 B F194 Created thee, in the image of God
 Express; and thou becamest a living soul.
 Male he created thee; but thy consort
 530 Female, for race; then blessed mankind, and said,
 "Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the Earth;
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,
 And every living thing that moves on the Earth."
 535 Wherever thus created, for no place
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou knowest,
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste;
 540 ♦ And freely all their pleasant fruit for food
 Gave thee; all sorts are here that all the Earth yields,
 Variety without end; but of the tree,
 Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,
 Thou mayest not; in the day thou eatest, thou diest;
 545 Death is the penalty imposed; beware,
 And govern well thy appetite; lest Sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 "Here finished he, and all that he had made
 Viewed, and behold all was entirely good;
 7.550 So even and morn accomplished the sixth day:

64 (48C)

3 (2C)

3

67

Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven,
 My damage fondly deemed, I can repair
Milton That detriment, if such it be to lose
Paradise Self-lost; and in a moment will create
Lost Another world, out of one man a race
 155 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here; till, by degrees of merit raised,
 They open to themselves at length the way
 Up hither, under long obedience tried;
 And Earth be changed to Heaven, and Heaven to Earth,
 160 One kingdom, joy and union without end.
 Mean while inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heaven;
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
 This I perform; speak thou, and be it done!
 My overshadowing Spirit and Might with thee
 165 I send along; ride forth, and bid the Deep
 Within appointed bounds be Heaven and Earth;
 Boundless the Deep, because I am to fill
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
 Though I, uncircumscribed myself retire,
 170 And put not forth my goodness, which is free
 To act or not; Necessity and Chance
 Approach not me, and what I will is Fate."
 So spake the Almighty, and to what he spake
 His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.
 F183 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift
 L1[O] Than time or motion, but to human ears
 B Cannot without process of speech be told.
 So told as earthly notion can receive.
 S179 Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven,
 180 When such was heard declared the Almighty's will;
 Glory they sung to the Most High, good will
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace;
 Glory to Him, whose just avenging ire
 185 Had driven out the ungodly from his sight
 And the habitations of the just; to Him
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordained
 Good out of evil to create; instead
 Of Spirits malign, a better race to bring
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse
 190 His good to worlds and ages infinite."
 So sang the Hierarchies: Meanwhile the Son
 On his great expedition now appeared,
 Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crowned
 Of Majesty Divine; sapience and love
 195 Immense, and all his Father in him shone.
 About his chariot numberless were poured
 Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,
 And Virtues, winged Spirits, and chariots winged
 From the armoury of God; where stand of old
 7.200

	Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodged	65 (49C)	"Let the Earth bring forth soul living in her kind,	\$187
	Against a solemn day, harnessed at hand,		Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of the Earth,	
	Celestial equipage; and now came forth		Each in their kind." The Earth obeyed, and straight	
	Spontaneous, for within them Spirit lived,		Opening her fertile womb teemed at a birth	
205	Attendant on their Lord. Heaven opened wide		Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,	455
	Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound		Limbed and full grown. Out of the ground up rose,	
F184 ^^7K	On golden hinges moving, to let forth		As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons	
	The King of Glory, in his powerful Word		In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den;	
	And Spirit, coming to create new worlds.		Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walked:	
210	On heavenly ground they stood; and from the shore		The cattle in the fields and meadows green:	460
	They viewed the vast immeasurable abyss		Those rare and solitary, these in flocks	
	Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,		Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.	
\$180	Up from the bottom turned by furious winds		The grassy clods now calved; now half appeared	F192
	And surging waves, as mountains, to assault		The tawny lion, pawing to get free	
215	Heaven's highth, and with the center mix the pole.		His hinder parts, then springs, as broke from bonds ,	465
	"Silence, ye troubled Waves, and thou Deep, peace!"		And rampant shakes his brinded mane; the ounce,	
	Said then the Omnifick Word; "your discord end!"		The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole	
	Nor stayed; but, on the wings of Cherubim		Rising the crumbled earth above them threw	
	Uplifted, in paternal glory rode		In hillocks; the swift stag from underground	
220	Far into Chaos, and the world unborn;		Bore up his branching head; scarce from his mould	470
	For Chaos heard his voice. Him all his train		Behemoth biggest born of earth upheaved	
	Followed in bright procession, to behold		His vastness; fleeced the flocks and bleating rose,	
	Creation, and the wonders of his might.		As plants; ambiguous between sea and land	
	Then stayed the fervid wheels, and in his hand		The river-horse, and scaly crocodile.	
225	He took the golden compasses, prepared		At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,	475
L1[I]	In God's eternal store, to circumscribe		Insect or worm. Those waved their limber fans	L1[I]
B	This universe, and all created things:		For wings, and smallest lineaments exact	B
	One foot he centered, and the other turned		In all the liveries decked of summer's pride	
	Round through the vast profundity obscure;		With spots of gold and purple, azure and green:	
230	And said, "Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,		These, as a line, their long dimension drew,	480
	This be thy just circumference, O World!"		Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all	
	Thus God the Heaven created, thus the Earth,	4 (3C)	Minims of nature; some of serpent-kind,	
	Matter unformed and void: Darkness profound		Wonderous in length and corpulence, involved	
	Covered the abyss: but on the watery calm		Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept	
235	His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,		The parsimonious emmet, provident	\$188
	And vital virtue infused, and vital warmth		Of future; in small room large heart enclosed;	
	Throughout the fluid mass; but downward purged		Pattern of just equality perhaps	
	The black tartareous cold infernal dregs,		Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes	
F185	Adverse to life: then founded, then conglobed	4	Of commonalty. Swarming next appeared	
240 ♦	Like things to like; the rest to several place		The female bee, that feeds her husband drone	490
	Disparted, and between spun out the air;		Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells	
	And Earth self-balanced on her center hung.		With honey stored. The rest are numberless ,	
	"Let there be light!" said God; and forthwith Light		And thou their natures knowest, and gavest them names,	
	Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,		Needless to thee repeated; nor unknown	
245	Sprung from the deep; and from her native east		The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field,	F193
Milton	To journey through the aery gloom began,		Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes	Milton
\$181	Sphered in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun		And hairy mane terrifick, though to thee	Paradise
Paradise	Was not; she in a cloudy tabernacle		Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.	Lost
Lost	Sojourned the while. God saw the light was good;		"Now Heaven in all her glory shone, and rolled	
7.250	And light from darkness by the hemisphere	68	Her motions, as the great first Mover's hand	7.500

Of fish that with their fins, and shining scales,
 Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft
 Bank the mid sea: part, single or with mate,
 Graze the sea-weed their pasture, and through groves
 Of coral stray; or, sporting with quick glance,
 Show to the sun their waved coats dropt with gold;
 Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend
 Moist nutriment; or under rocks their food
 In jointed armour watch: on smooth the seal
 And bended dolphins play; part huge of bulk
 Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,
 Tempest the ocean. There leviathan,
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
 Stretched **like a promontory** sleeps or swims,
 And **seems a moving land**; and at his gills
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.
 Meanwhile the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,
 Their brood as numerous hatch, from the egg that soon
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclosed
 Their callow young; but feathered soon and fledge
 They summed their pens; and, soaring the air sublime,
 With clang despised the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect. There the eagle and the stork
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build.
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise
 In common, ranged in figure, wedged their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their aery caravan, high over seas
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing
 Easing their flight; so steers the prudent crane
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds; the air
 Floats as they pass, fanned with unnumbered plumes.
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song
 Solaced the woods, and spread their painted wings
 Till even; nor then the solemn nightingale
 Ceased warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays.
 Others, on silver lakes and rivers, bathed
 Their downy breast; the swan with arched neck,
 Between her white wings mantling, proudly rows
 Her state with oary feet; yet oft they quit
 The dank, and, rising on stiff pennons, tower
 The mid aerial sky: Others on ground
 Walked firm; the crested cock whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours, and the other whose gay train
 Adorns him, coloured with the florid hue
 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus
 With fish replenished, and the air with fowl,
 Evening and morn solemnized the fifth day.
 "The sixth, and of creation last, arose
 With evening harps and matin; when God said,

66 (50c)

5 (4c)

5

69

Divided: light the Day, and darkness Night,
 He named. Thus was the first day even and morn:
 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
 By the celestial quires, when orient light
 Exhaling first from darkness they beheld;
 Birthday of Heaven and Earth; with joy and shout
 The hollow universal orb they filled,
 And touched their golden harps, and hymning praised
 God and his works; Creator him they sung,
 Both when first evening was, and when first morn.
 Again, God said, "Let there be firmament
 Amid the waters, and let it divide
 The waters from the waters!" And God made
 The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
 Transparent, elemental air, diffused
 In circuit to the uttermost convex
 Of this great round; partition firm and sure,
 The waters underneath from those above
 Dividing: for as earth, so he the world
 Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide
 Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule
 Of Chaos far removed; lest fierce extremes
 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:
 And Heaven he named the Firmament: So even
 And morning chorus sung the second day.
 "The Earth was formed, but in the womb as yet
 Of waters, embryo immature, involved,
 Appeared not; over all the face of Earth
 Main ocean flowed, not idle; but, with warm
 Prolifick humour softening all her globe,
 Fermented the great mother to conceive,
 Sate with genial moisture; when God said,
 "Be gathered now ye waters under Heaven
 Into one place, and let dry land appear!"
 Immediately the mountains huge appear
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
 Into the clouds; their tops ascend the sky:
 So high as heaved the tumid hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
 Capacious bed of waters: Thither they
 Hasted with glad precipitance, uprolled,
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry;
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste; such flight the great command impressed
 On the swift floods: As armies at the call
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to their standard; so the watery throng,
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found;
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,
 Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them rock or hill;

Milton

Paradise

Lost

255

260

265

270

F186

275

L2[O]

B

280

S182

285

290

295

7.300

But they, or underground, or circuit wide
 With serpent error wandering, found their way,
F187 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore;
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,
 305 All but within those banks, where rivers now
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.
 The dry land, Earth, and the great receptacle
 Of congregated waters he called Seas;
 And saw that it was good; and said, "Let the Earth
 310 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed,
 And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,
 Whose seed is in herself upon the Earth."
 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorned,
S183 Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad
 Her universal face with pleasant green;
 Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flowered
 Opening their various colours, and made gay
 Her bosom, smelling sweet: and, these scarce blown,
 320 Forth flourished thick the clustering vine, forth crept
 The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed
 Embattled in her field, and the humble shrub,
 And bush with frizzled hair implicit: Last
 Rose, **as in dance**, the stately trees, and spread
 325 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemmed
L2[I] Their blossoms: With high woods the hills were crowned;
B With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side;
 With borders long the rivers: that Earth now
 Seemed like to Heaven, a seat where Gods might dwell,
 330 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt
 Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rained
 Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground
 None was; but from the Earth a dewy mist
 Went up, and watered all the ground, and each
F188 Plant of the field; which, ere it was in the Earth,
 God made, and every herb, before it grew
 On the green stem: God saw that it was good:
 So even and morn recorded the third day.
 Again the Almighty spake, "Let there be lights
 340 ♦ High in the expanse of Heaven, to divide
 The day from night; and let them be for signs,
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years;
 And let them be for lights, as I ordain
 Their office in the firmament of Heaven,
 345 To give light on the Earth!" and it was so.
Milton And God made two great lights, great for their use
Paradise To Man, the greater to have rule by day,
Lost The less by night, altern; and made the stars,
S184 And set them in the firmament of Heaven
 7.350 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the day

67 (51C)

6 (5C)

6

70

In their vicissitude, and rule the night,
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great work, that it was good.
 For of celestial bodies first the Sun
 A mighty sphere he framed, unlightsome first, 355
 Though of ethereal mould; then formed the moon
 Globose, and every magnitude of stars,
 And sowed with stars the Heaven, **thick as a field**.
 Of light by far the greater part he took,
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and placed 360
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the **liquid light**; firm to retain
 Her gathered beams, great palace now of light.
 Hither, **as to their fountain**, other stars
 Repairing, **in their golden urns draw light**, 365
 And hence the morning-planet gilds her horns;
 By tincture or reflection they augment **F189**
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen,
 370 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,
 Regent of day, and all the horizon round
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run
 His longitude through Heaven's high road; the gray
 Dawn, and the Pleiades, before him danced,
 Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon, 375
 But opposite in levelled west was set, **L2[I]**
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light **B**
 From him; for other light she needed none
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps
 Till night; then in the east her turn she shines, 380
 Revolved on Heaven's great axle, and her reign
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appeared **S185**
 Spangling the hemisphere. Then first adorned
 With their bright luminaries that set and rose, 385
 Glad evening and glad morn crowned the fourth day.
 And God said, "Let the waters generate
 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul;
 And let fowl fly above the Earth, with wings
 Displayed on the open firmament of Heaven." 390
 And God created the great whales, and each
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
 The waters generated by their kinds,
 And every bird of wing after his kind;
 And saw that it was good, and blessed them, saying: 395
 "Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,
 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill; **Milton**
 And let the fowl be multiplied, on the Earth!" **Paradise**
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay, **Lost**
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals **F190**
 7.400

	A pomp of winning Graces waited still,	68	Yet not till the Creator, from his work	
Milton	And from about her shot darts of desire		Desisting, though unwearied, up returned,	Milton
Paradise	Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.		Up to the Heaven of Heavens, his high abode,	\$190 Paradise
Lost	And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt proposed,		Thence to behold this new created world,	Lost
65	Benevolent and facile thus replied:		The addition of his empire, how it showed	555
	“To ask or search, I blame thee not, for Heaven		In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,	
	Is as the book of God before thee set,		Answering his great idea. Up he rode	
	Wherein to read his wonderous works, and learn		Followed with acclamation, and the sound	
	His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years;		Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned	F195
70	This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth,		Angelick harmonies. The earth, the air	560
	Imports not, if thou reckon right; the rest		Resounded (thou rememberest, for thou heardest)	
	From Man or Angel the great Architect		The heavens and all the constellations rung,	
	Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge		The planets in their station listening stood,	
	His secrets, to be scanned by them who ought		While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.	
75	Rather admire; or, if they list to try		“Open, ye everlasting gates!” they sung,	565
	Conjecture, he his fabrick of the Heavens		“Open, ye Heavens! your living doors! Let in	
\$196	Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move		The great Creator from his work returned	
	His laughter at their quaint opinions wide		Magnificent, his six days' work, a World.	
	Hereafter; when they come to model Heaven		Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deign	
80	And calculate the stars, how they will wield		To visit oft the dwellings of just men,	570
	The mighty frame; how build, unbuild, contrive		Delighted, and with frequent intercourse	6K
F200	To save appearances; how gird the sphere		Thither will send his winged messengers	
	With centrick and eccentric scribbled o'er,		On errands of supernal grace.” So sung	
	Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb:		The glorious train ascending. He through Heaven,	
85	Already by thy reasoning this I guess,		That opened wide her blazing portals, led	575
L1[O]	Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest		To God's eternal house direct the way,	L1[O]
C	That bodies bright and greater should not serve		A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold	C
	The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run,		And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,	
	Earth sitting still, when she alone receives		Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,	
90	The benefit. Consider first, that great		Which nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest	580
	Or bright infers not excellence: the Earth		Powdered with stars. And now on Earth the seventh	
	Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,	7	Evening arose in Eden, for the sun	
	Nor glistening, may of solid good contain		Was set, and twilight from the east came on,	
	More plenty than the sun that barren shines;		Forerunning night; when at the holy mount	
95	Whose virtue on itself works no effect,		Of Heaven's high-seated top, the imperial throne	585
	But in the fruitful Earth; there first received,		Of Godhead, fixed for ever firm and sure,	
	His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.		The Filial Power arrived, and sat him down	\$191
	Yet not to Earth are those bright luminaries		With his great Father; for he also went	
	Officious; but to thee, Earth's habitant.	7	Invisible, yet staid (such privilege	
8.100	And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak		Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordained,	590
	The Maker's high magnificence, who built		Author and End of all things, and, from work	F196
	So spacious, and his line stretched out so far,		Now resting, blessed and hallowed the seventh day,	
♦	That Man may know he dwells not in his own;		As resting on that day from all his work;	
	An edifice too large for him to fill,		But not in silence holy kept. The harp	
105	Lodged in a small partition; and the rest		Had work and rested not; the solemn pipe,	595
	Ordained for uses to his Lord best known.		And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,	
	The swiftness of those circles attribute,		All sounds on fret, by string or golden wire,	
	Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,		Tempered soft tunings, intermixed with voice	
	That to corporeal substances could add		Choral or unison; of incense clouds,	
8.110	Speed almost spiritual. Me thou thinkest not slow,	71	Fuming from golden censers, hid the mount.	7.600
\$197	Who since the morning-hour set out from Heaven			

Creation and the six days acts they sung:
 "Great are thy works, Jehovah! infinite
 Thy power! what thought can measure thee, or tongue
 Relate thee! Greater now in thy return
 605 Than from the giant Angels. Thee that day
 Thy thunders magnified; but to create
 Is greater than created to destroy.
 Who can impair thee, Mighty King, or bound
 Thy empire! Easily the proud attempt
 610 Of Spirits apostate, and their counsels vain,
 Thou hast repelled; while impiously they thought
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 615 To manifest the more thy might: his evil
 Thou usest, and from thence createst more good.
 Witness this new-made world, another Heaven
 From Heaven-gate not far, founded in view
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea;
 620 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars
 S192 Numerous, and every star perhaps a world
 Of destined habitation; but thou knowest
 F197 Their seasons: among these the seat of Men,
 Earth, with her nether ocean circumfused,
 625 Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy Men,
 L1[I] And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanced,
 C Created in his image, there to dwell
 And worship him, and in reward to rule
 Over his works on earth, in sea, or air,
 630 And multiply a race of worshippers
 Holy and just; thrice happy, if they know
 Their happiness, and persevere upright!"
 So sung they, and the empyrean rung
 With halleluiahs; thus was Sabbath kept.
 635 And thy request think now fulfilled, that asked
 How first this world and face of things began,
 And what before thy memory was done
 From the beginning; that posterity,
 Informed by thee, might know: If else thou seekest
 7.640 ♦ Aught, not surpassing human measure, say.
 NEW 8.1 T HE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear
 NEW So charming left his voice, that he awhile
 ♦ NEW Thought him still speaking, still stood fixed to hear;
 NEW Then, as new waked, thus gratefully replied:
 5 "What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
 Equal, have I to render thee, divine
 Historian, who thus largely hast allayed
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed
 S194 This friendly condescension to relate
 8.10 Things, else by me unsearchable, now heard

69

8

8

72

With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
 With glory attributed to the high
 Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,
 Which only thy solution can resolve.
 When I behold this goodly frame, this world, 15
 Of Heaven and Earth consisting, and compute
 Their magnitudes; this Earth, a spot, a grain,
 An atom, with the firmament compared F198
 And all her numbered stars, that seem to roll
 Spaces incomprehensible (for such 20
 Their distance argues, and their swift return
 Diurnal) merely to officiate light
 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,
 One day and night, in all her vast survey
 Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire 25
 How Nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,
 For aught appears, and on their orbs impose 30
 Such restless revolution, day by day
 Repeated; while the sedentary Earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Served by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives, 35
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought L1[I]
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light; C
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails."
 So spake our sire, and by his countenance seemed
 Entering on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve 40
 Perceiving, where she sat retired in sight,
 With lowliness majestick from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay, S195
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,
 To visit how they prospered, bud and bloom, 45
 Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,
 And, touched by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high. Such pleasure she reserved, F199 8.50
 Adam relating, she sole auditress;
 Her husband the relator she preferred
 Before the Angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55
 With conjugal caresses: from his lip
 Not words alone pleased her. O! when meet now Milton
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour joined! Paradise
 With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went, Lost
 Not unattended; for on her, as Queen, 8.60

And over fields and waters, as in air
Milton Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up
Paradise ♦ A woody mountain, whose high top was plain,
Lost A circuit wide, enclosed, with goodliest trees
305 Planted, with walks, and bowers, that what I saw
F207 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seemed. Each tree,
Loaden with fairest fruit that hung to the eye
Tempting, stirred in me sudden appetite
To pluck and eat; whereat I waked, and found
310 Before mine eyes all real, as the dream
Had lively shadowed: Here had new begun
My wandering, had not He, who was my guide
Up hither, from among the trees appeared,
Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,
S203 In adoration at his feet I fell
Submit; He reared me, and "Whom thou soughtest I am,"
Said mildly, "**Author** of all this thou seest
Above, or round about thee, or beneath.
This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
320 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat.
Of every tree that in the garden grows
Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth.
But of the tree whose operation brings
Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set
325 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,
L1[O] Amid the garden by the Tree of Life,
A — Remember what I warn thee — shun to taste,
And shun the bitter consequence; for know,
The day thou eatest thereof, my sole command
330 Transgressed, inevitably thou shalt die,
From that day mortal, and this happy state
Shalt lose, expelled from hence into a world
Of woe and sorrow." Sternly he pronounced
The rigid interdiction, which resounds
335 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice
Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect
Returned, and gracious purpose thus renewed:
F208 "Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth
To thee and to thy race I give; as lords
340 Possess it, and all things that therein live,
Or live in sea or air, beast, fish, and fowl.
In sign whereof, each bird and beast, behold!
After their kinds; I bring them to receive
From thee their names, and pay thee fealty
345 With low subjection; understand the same
Of fish within their watery residence,
Not hither summoned, since they cannot change
Their element, to draw the thinner air."
S204 As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold
8.350 Approaching two and two; these cowering low

70

1

1

73

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's First Edition (in 10 books) printed by Peter Parker (1667). The First Edition does not number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's Second Edition (in 12 books) printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 8



EPIC POEM
.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 653 lines 3.0

PREVIEW
Book 9

A 2L 1 - 350
B 2L 351 - 653

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
73 to 80

NEW THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear
 NEW So charming left his voice, that he awhile
 ♦ NEW Thought him still speaking, still stood fixed to hear;
 NEW Then, as new waked, thus gratefully replied:
 5 "What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
 Equal, have I to render thee, divine
 Historian, who thus largely hast allayed
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed
 S194 This friendly condescension to relate
 10 Things, else by me unsearchable, now heard
 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
 With glory attributed to the high
 Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,
 Which only thy solution can resolve.
 15 When I behold this goodly frame, this world,
 Of Heaven and Earth consisting, and compute
 Their magnitudes; this Earth, a spot, a grain,
 F198 An atom, with the firmament compared
 And all her numbered stars, that seem to roll
 20 Spaces incomprehensible (for such
 Their distance argues, and their swift return
 Diurnal) merely to officiate light
 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,
 One day and night, in all her vast survey
 25 Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire
 L1[I] How Nature wise and frugal could commit
 A Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,
 30 For aught appears, and on their orbs impose
 Such restless revolution, day by day
 Repeated; while the sedentary Earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Served by more noble than herself, attains
 35 Her end without least motion, and receives,
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails."
 So spake our sire, and by his countenance seemed
 40 Entering on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve
 Perceiving, where she sat retired in sight,
 With lowliness majestick from her seat,
 S195 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,
 45 To visit how they prospered, bud and bloom,
 Milton Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,
 Paradise And, touched by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.
 Lost Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 8.50 F199 Of what was high. Such pleasure she reserved,

71 (52C)

2 (1C)

2

74

Is hard; for who himself beginning knew
 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induced me. As new waked from soundest sleep,
 Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,
 In balmy sweat; which with his beams the sun 255
 Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed.
 Straight toward Heaven my wondering eyes I turned,
 And gazed a while the ample sky; till, raised
 By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright 260
 Stood on my feet. About me round I saw
 Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,
 And liquid lapse of murmuring streams; by these,
 Creatures that lived and moved, and walked, or flew;
 Birds on the branches warbling; all things smiled; 265
 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflowed.
 Myself I then perused, and limb by limb
 Surveyed, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints, as lively vigour led:
 But who I was, or where, or from what cause, 270
 Knew not; to speak I tried, and forthwith spake;
 My tongue obeyed, and readily could name
 Whate'er I saw. "Thou Sun," said I, "fair light,
 And thou enlightened Earth, so fresh and gay, F206
 Ye Hills, and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains, 275
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell, L1[I]
 Tell, if ye saw, how I came thus, how here? — A
 Not of myself; — by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power pre-eminent:
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 280
 From whom I have that thus I move and live, S202
 And feel that I am happier than I know.
 "While thus I called, and strayed I knew not whither,
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld
 This happy light; when, answer none returned, 285
 On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,
 Pensive I sat me down; there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seised
 My droused sense, untroubled, though I thought
 I then was passing to my former state 290
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:
 When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently moved
 My fancy to believe I yet had being,
 And lived. One came, methought, of shape divine, 295
 And said, "Thy mansion wants thee, Adam; rise, Milton
 First Man, of men innumerable ordained Paradise
 First Father! called by thee, I come thy guide Lost
 To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepared."
 So saying, by the hand he took me raised, 8.300

Of something not unseasonable to ask,
Milton By sufferance, and thy wonted favour, deigned.
Paradise ♦ Thee I have heard relating what was done
Lost Ere my remembrance: now, hear me relate
205 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard;
And day is not yet spent; till then thou seest
How subtly to detain thee I devise;
Inviting thee to hear while I relate;
Fond! were it not in hope of thy reply.
210 **F204** For while I sit with thee I seem in Heaven;
And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
S200 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
Of sweet repast. They satiate, and soon fill,
215 Though pleasant; but thy words, with grace divine
Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety.”
To whom thus Raphael answered heavenly meek:
“Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,
Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee
220 Abundantly his gifts hath also poured
Inward and outward both, his image fair:
Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace
Attends thee, and each word, each motion, forms;
Nor less think we in Heaven of thee on Earth
225 Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire
L2[O] Gladly into the ways of God with Man;
A For God, we see, hath honoured thee, and set
On Man his equal love: Say therefore on;
For I that day was absent, as befell,
230 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,
Far on excursion toward the gates of Hell;
Squared in full legion (such command we had)
To see that none thence issued forth a spy,
Or enemy, while God was in his work;
235 Lest he, incensed at such eruption bold,
Destruction with creation might have mixed.
Not that they durst without his leave attempt;
But us he sends upon his high behests
For state, as Sovran King, and to endure
240 Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut,
The dismal gates, and barricadoed strong;
F205 But long ere our approaching heard within
Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,
Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.
245 Glad we returned up to the coasts of light
Ere sabbath-evening: so we had in charge.
S201 But thy relation now; for I attend,
Pleased with thy words no less than thou with mine.”
vv 1/2 So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire:
8.250 “For Man to tell how human life began

72 (53c)

3 (2c)

3

75

Adam relating, she sole auditress;
Her husband the relator she preferred
Milton Before the Angel, and of him to ask
Paradise Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix
Lost Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute
55 With conjugal caresses: from his lip
Not words alone pleased her. O! when meet now
Such pairs, in love and mutual honour joined!
With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went,
Not unattended; for on her, as Queen,
60 A pomp of winning Graces waited still,
And from about her shot darts of desire
Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.
And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt proposed,
Benevolent and facile thus replied:
65 “To ask or search, I blame thee not, for Heaven
Is as the book of God before thee set,
Wherein to read his wonderous works, and learn
His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years;
This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth,
70 Imports not, if thou reckon right; the rest
From Man or Angel the great Architect
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
His secrets, to be scanned by them who ought
Rather admire; or, if they list to try
75 Conjecture, he his fabrick of the Heavens
L2[O] Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move
S196 A His laughter at their quaint opinions wide
Hereafter; when they come to model Heaven
And calculate the stars, how they will wield
80 The mighty frame; how build, unbuild, contrive
To save appearances; how gird the sphere
F200 With centrick and eccentric scribbled o'er,
Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb:
Already by thy reasoning this I guess,
85 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
That bodies bright and greater should not serve
The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run,
Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
The benefit. Consider first, that great
90 Or bright infers not excellence: the Earth
Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,
Nor glistening, may of solid good contain
More plenty than the sun that barren shines;
Whose virtue on itself works no effect,
95 But in the fruitful Earth; there first received,
His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
Yet not to Earth are those bright luminaries
Officious; but to thee, Earth's habitant.
And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak
8.100

♦	The Maker's high magnificence, who built	73 (54c)	— Which two great sexes animate the world —	
	So spacious, and his line stretched out so far,		Stored in each orb perhaps with some that live.	
105	That Man may know he dwells not in his own;		For such vast room in Nature unpossessed	
	An edifice too large for him to fill,		By living soul, desert and desolate,	
110	Lodged in a small partition; and the rest		Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute	155
	Ordained for uses to his Lord best known.		Each orb a glimpse of light, conveyed so far	
S197	The swiftness of those circles attribute,		Down to this habitable, which returns	
	Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,		Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.	
F201	That to corporeal substances could add		But whether thus these things, or whether not;	
	Speed almost spiritual. Me thou thinkest not slow,		But whether the sun, predominant in Heaven,	160
115	Who since the morning-hour set out from Heaven		Rise on the earth; or earth rise on the sun;	
	Where God resides, and ere mid-day arrived		He from the east his flaming road begin;	
120	In Eden; distance inexpressible		Or she from west her silent course advance,	
	By numbers that have name. But this I urge,		With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps	
125	Admitting motion in the Heavens, to show		On her soft axle, while she paces even,	165
	Invalid that which thee to doubt it moved;		And bears thee soft with the smooth hair along;	
L2[I]	Not that I so affirm, though so it seem		Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid;	
	To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.		Leave them to God above; him serve and fear!	
A	God, to remove his ways from human sense,		Of other creatures, as him pleases best,	
	Placed Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight,		Wherever placed, let him dispose; joy thou	170
130	If it presume, might err in things too high,		In what he gives to thee, this Paradise	
	And no advantage gain. What if the sun		And thy fair Eve; Heaven is for thee too high	
135	Be center to the world; and other stars,		To know what passes there. Be lowly wise:	
	By his attractive virtue and their own		Think only what concerns thee, and thy being;	
140	Incited, dance about him various rounds?		Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there	175
	Their wandering course now high, now low, then hid,		Live, in what state, condition, or degree;	L2[I]
S198	Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,		Contented that thus far hath been revealed	A
	In six thou seest; and what if seventh to these		Not of Earth only, but of highest Heaven.”	F203
F202	The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,		To whom thus Adam, cleared of doubt, replied:	S199
	Insensibly three different motions move?		“How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure	180
Milton	Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,	4 (3c)	Intelligence of Heaven, Angel serene!	
	Moved contrary with thwart obliquities;		And, freed from intricacies, <u>thought</u> to live	
Lost	Or save the sun his labour, and that swift	4	The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts	
	Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb supposed,		To interrupt the sweet of life, from which	
8.150	Invisible else above all stars, the wheel		God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,	185
	Of day and night; which needs not thy belief,		And not molest us, unless we ourselves	
	If earth, industrious of herself, fetch day		Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vain.	
	Travelling east, and with her part averse		But apt the mind or fancy is to rove	
	From the sun's beam meet night, her other part		Unchecked, and of her roving is no end;	
	Still luminous by his ray. What if that light,		Till warned, or by experience taught, she learn,	190
	Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,		That, not to know at large of things remote	
	To the terrestrial moon be as a star,		From use, obscure and subtle, but to know	
	Enlightening her by day, as she by night		That which before us lies in daily life	
	This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,		Is the prime wisdom; what is more, is fume,	
	Fields and inhabitants. Her spots thou seest		Or emptiness, or fond impertinence:	195
	As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce		And renders us in things that most concern	Milton
	Fruits in her softened soil, for some to eat		Unpractised, unprepared, and still to seek.	Paradise
	Allotted there; and other suns perhaps,		Therefore from this high pitch let us descend	Lost
	With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry		A lower flight, and speak of things at hand	
	Communicating male and female light		Useful; whence, haply, mention may arise	8.200

The sun was sunk, and after him the star
Milton Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring
Paradise Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter
Lost 'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round:
 When Satan, who late fled before the threats
 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd
 55 In meditated fraud and malice, bent
 S216 On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless returned.
 By nighthe fled, and at midnight returned,
 From compassing the earth; cautious of day,
 60 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried
 His entrance, and forewarned the Cherubim
 That kept their watch. Thence full of anguish driven,
 The space of seven continued nights he rode
 With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line
 65 He circled; four times crossed the car of night
 From pole to pole, traversing each colure;
 On the eighth returned; and, on the coast averse
 From entrance or Cherubick watch, by stealth
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,
 70 Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,
 Where Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part
L1[O] Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.
B In with the river sunk, and with it rose
 Satan, involved in rising mist; then sought
 Where to lie hid. Sea he had searched, and land,
 From Eden over Pontus, and the pool
 Maeotis, up beyond the river Ob;
 F221 Downward as far antarctick; and in length,
 80 West from Orontes to the ocean barred
 At Darien; thence to the land where flows
 Ganges and Indus. Thus the orb he roamed
 With narrow search; and with inspection deep
 Considered every creature, which of all
 85 Most opportune might serve his wiles; and found
 The Serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
 Him after long debate, irresolute
 Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence chose
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom
 90 S217 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide
 From sharpest sight; for, in the wily snake
 Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,
 As from his wit and native subtlety
 Proceeding; which, in other beasts observed,
 95 Doubt might beget of diabolick power
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute.
 9.97 Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus poured:

74

With blandishment; each bird stooped on his wing.
 I named them, as they passed, and understood
Milton Their nature, with such knowledge God endued
Paradise My sudden apprehension: But in these
Lost I found not what methought I wanted still;
 355 And to the heavenly Vision thus presumed:
 "O, by what name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,
 Surpassest far my naming; how may I
 Adore thee, Author of this universe,
 360 And all this good to man? for whose well-being
 So amply, and with hands so liberal,
 Thou hast provided all things: But with me
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness? who can enjoy alone?
 365 Or, all enjoying, what contentment find?"
 Thus I presumptuous; and the Vision bright,
 As with a smile more brightened, thus replied:
 "What callest thou solitude? Is not the Earth
 With various living creatures, and the air
 370 Replenished, and all these at thy command
 To come and play before thee? Knowest thou not
 Their language and their ways? They also know,
 And reason not contemptibly: with these
 Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large."
 375 So spake the Universal Lord, and seemed
L1[O] So ordering. I, with leave of speech implored,
B And humble deprecation, thus replied:
 "Let not my words offend thee, Heavenly Power;
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.
 380 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
 And these inferiour far beneath me set?
 Among unequals what society
 S205 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due
 385 Given and received; but, in disparity
 The one intense, the other still remiss,
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove
 Tedious alike. Of fellowship I speak
 390 Such as I seek, fit to participate
 All rational delight, wherein the brute
 Cannot be human consort. They rejoice
 Each with their kind, lion with lioness;
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combined.
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl
 395 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all."
 Whereto the Almighty answered, not displeased:
 "A nice and subtle happiness, I see,
 Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice
 8.400

77

Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste
F209 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.
 ♦ What thinkest thou then of me, and this my state?
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possessed
 405 Of happiness, or not? who am alone
 From all eternity; for none I know
 Second to me or like, equal much less.
 How have I then with whom to hold converse
 Save with the creatures which I made, and those
 410 To me inferiour, infinite descents
 Beneath what other creatures are to thee?"
 He ceased; I lowly answered: "To attain
 The highth and depth of thy eternal ways
 All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!
 415 Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee
 Is no deficiencie found; not so is Man,
S206 But in degree; the cause of his desire
 By conversation with his like to help
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
 420 Shouldst propagate, already Infinite,
 And through all numbers absolute, though One:
 But Man by number is to manifest
 His single imperfection, and beget
 Like of his like, his image multiplied,
 425 In unity defective; which requires
L1[I] Collateral love, and dearest amity.
B Thou in thy secresy although alone,
 Best with thyself accompanied, seekest not
 Social communication; yet, so pleased,
 430 Canst raise thy creature to what highth thou wilt
 Of union or communion, deified:
 I, by conversing, cannot these erect
 From prone; nor in their ways complacence find."
F211 Thus I emboldened spake, and freedom used
 435 Permissive, and acceptance found; which gained
 This answer from the gracious Voice Divine:
 "Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleased;
 And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself,
 440 Expressing well the spirit within thee free,
 My image, not imparted to the brute,
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike;
 And be so minded still. I, ere thou spakest,
 445 Knew it not good for Man to be alone;
Milton And no such company as then thou sawest
Paradise Intended thee, for trial only brought,
Lost To see how thou couldest judge of fit and meet.
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assured,
 8.450 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,

75

Be good and friendly still, and oft return!"
 So parted they, the Angel up to Heaven
 From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower. **8.653**
NO more of talk where God or Angel guest **9.1**
 With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd,
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast; permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd. I now must change **5**
 Those notes to tragick; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
 And disobedience; on the part of Heaven
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 Anger and just rebuke, and judgement given, **10**
 That brought into this world a world of woe,
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery
 Death's harbinger: sad talk! yet argument
 Not less but more heroick than the wrath **@**
 Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued **F219**
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd;
 Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long
 Perplexed the Greek, and Cytherea's son;
 If answerable style I can obtain **20**
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns
 Her nightly visitation, unimplor'd, **S215**
 And dictates to me slumbering; or inspires **L1[I]**
 Easy my unpremeditated verse, **B**
 Since first this subject for heroick song
 Pleas'd me, long choosing and beginning late;
 Not sedulous by nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only argument
 Heroick deem'd chief mastery to dissect
 With long and tedious havock, fabled knights, **30**
 In battles feign'd; the better fortitude
 Of patience and heroick martyrdom
 Unsung; or to describe races and games,
 Or tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,
 Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds, **35**
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
 At joust and tournament; then marshall'd feast
 Serv'd up in hall with sewers and seneshals;
 The skill of artifice or office mean,
 Not that which justly gives heroick name **40**
 To person or to poem. Me, of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument
 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing **45**
 Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine,
 Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear. **F220 9.47**

6

6

78

	Those thousand decencies, that daily flow	76 (55c)	Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire."	S207
Milton	From all her words and actions mixed with love		He ended, or I heard no more; for now	Milton
Paradise ♦	And sweet compliance, which declare unfeigned		My earthly by his heavenly overpowered,	Paradise
Lost	Union of mind, or in us both one soul;		Which it had long stood under, strained to the highth	Lost
605	Harmony to behold in wedded pair		In that celestial colloquy sublime,	455
	More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.		As with an object that excels the sense	
	Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose		Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair	
	What inward thence I feel, not therefore foiled,		Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, called	
	Who meet with various objects, from the sense		By Nature as in aid, and closed mine eyes.	
610	Variouly representing; yet, still free,		Mine eyes he closed, but open left the cell	460
	Approve the best, and follow what I approve.		Of fancy, my internal sight, by which,	
	To love, thou blamest me not; for Love thou sayest		Abstract as in a trance, methought I saw,	
	Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide.		Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape	
	Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask:		Still glorious before whom awake I stood;	
615	Love not the heavenly Spirits, and how their love		Who stooping opened my left side, and took	465
	Express they? by looks only, or do they mix		From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,	F212
	Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?"		And life-blood streaming fresh; wide was the wound,	
	To whom the Angel, with a smile that glowed		But suddenly with flesh filled up and healed.	
	Celestial rosy red, Love's proper hue,		The rib he formed and fashioned with his hands;	
620	Answered: "Let it suffice thee that thou knowest		Under his forming hands a creature grew,	470
S212	Us happy, and without love no happiness.		Man-like, but different sex, so lovely fair,	
	Whatever pure thou in the body enjoyest,		That what seemed fair in all the world, seemed now	
	(And pure thou wert created) we enjoy		Mean, or in her summed up, in her contained	
	In eminence, and obstacle find none		And in her looks; which from that time infused	
625	Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars:		Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,	475
L2[O] F217	Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,		And into all things from her air inspired	L2[O]
B	Total they mix, union of pure with pure		The spirit of love and amorous delight.	B
	Desiring, nor restrained conveyance need,		She disappeared, and left me dark; I waked	
	As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.		To find her, or for ever to deplore	
630	But I can now no more; the parting sun		Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure:	480
	Beyond the Earth's green Cape and verdant Isles		When out of hope, behold her not far off,	
	Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.	7 (4c)	Such as I saw her in my dream, adorned	
	Be strong, live happy, and love! But, first of all,		With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow	
	Him, whom to love is to obey, and keep		To make her amiable. On she came,	
635	His great command; take heed lest passion sway		Led by her heavenly Maker, though unseen,	S208
	Thy judgement to do aught, which else free will		And guided by his voice; nor uninformed	
	Would not admit: thine, and of all thy sons		Of nuptial sanctity, and marriage rites.	
	The weal or woe in thee is placed; beware!		Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,	
	I in thy persevering shall rejoice,	7	In every gesture dignity and love.	
640	And all the Blest. Stand fast; to stand or fall		I overjoyed could not forbear aloud:	490
	Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.		"This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfilled	
	Perfect within, no outward aid require;		Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,	
	And all temptation to transgress repel."		Giver of all things fair! but fairest this	
	So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus		Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see	
645	Followed with benediction: "Since to part,		Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself	495
	Go, heavenly guest, ethereal Messenger,		Before me; Woman is her name, of Man	
	Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore!		Extracted: for this cause he shall forego	^4K
	Gentle to me and affable hath been		Father and mother, and to his wife adhere;	F213
	Thy condescension, and shall be honoured ever		And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul."	
8.650	With grateful memory; thou to mankind	79	"She heard me thus; and though divinely brought,	8.500

	Yet innocence, and virgin modesty,	77 (56c)	All higher knowledge in her presence falls	
	Her virtue, and the conscience of her worth,		Degraded; Wisdom in discourse with her	
♦	That would be wooed, and not unsought be won,		Loses discountenanced, and like Folly shows;	\$210
	Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retired,		Authority and Reason on her wait,	
505	The more desirable; or, to say all,		As one intended first, not after made	555
	Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,		Occasionally; and, to consummate all,	
	Wrought in her so, that seeing me she turned;		Greatness of mind and Nobleness their seat	
	I followed her; she what was honour knew,		Build in her loveliest, and create an awe	
	And with obsequious majesty approved		About her, as a guard angelick placed.”	
510	My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower		To whom the Angel with contracted brow:	560
	I led her blushing like the morn: all Heaven,		“Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part;	
	And happy constellations, on that hour		Do thou but thine; and be not diffident	F215
	Shed their selectest influence; the Earth		Of Wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou	
	Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill;		Dismiss not her, when most thou needest her nigh,	
515	Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs		By attributing overmuch to things	565
	Whispered it to the woods, and from their wings		Less excellent, as thou thyself perceivest.	
	Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,		For, what admirest thou, what transports thee so?	^^6K
	Disporting, till the amorous bird of night		An outside; fair, no doubt, and worthy well	
\$209	Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening-star		Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,	
520	On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.		Not thy subjection: Weigh with her thyself;	570
	“Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought		Then value. Oft-times nothing profits more	
	My story to the sum of earthly bliss,		Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right	
	Which I enjoy; and must confess to find		Well managed; of that skill the more thou knowest,	
	In all things else delight indeed, but such		The more she will acknowledge thee her head,	
525	As, used or not, works in the mind no change,		And to realities yield all her shows;	575
L2[I]	Nor vehement desire; these delicacies		Made so adorn for thy delight the more,	L2[I]
B	I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,		So awful, that with honour thou mayest love	B
	Walks, and the melody of birds: but here		Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.	
	Far otherwise, transported I behold,		But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind	
530 F214	Transported touch; here passion first I felt,		Is propagated, seem such dear delight	580
	Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else		Beyond all other; think the same vouchsafed	
	Superior and unmoved; here only weak	8 (5c)	To cattle and each beast; which would not be	
	Against the charm of Beauty’s powerful glance.		To them made common and divulged, if aught	
	Or Nature failed in me, and left some part		Therein enjoyed were worthy to subdue	
535	Not proof enough such object to sustain,		The soul of man, or passion in him move.	585
	Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps		What higher in her society thou findest	
	More than enough; at least on her bestowed		Attractive, human, rational, love still;	\$211
	Too much of ornament, in outward show		In loving thou dost well, in passion not,	
	Elaborate, of inward less exact.	8	Wherein true love consists not: Love refines	
540	For well I understand, in the prime end		The thoughts, and heart enlarges; hath his seat	590
	Of Nature her the inferiour, in the mind		In reason, and is judicious; is the scale	
	And inward faculties, which most excel;		By which to heavenly love thou mayest ascend,	
	In outward also her resembling less		Not sunk in carnal pleasure; for which cause,	
	His image who made both, and less expressing		Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.”	F216
545	The character of that dominion given		To whom thus, half abashed, Adam replied:	595
Milton	O’er other creatures; yet when I approach		“Neither her outside formed so fair, nor aught	Milton
Paradise	Her loveliness, so absolute she seems		In procreation common to all kinds,	Paradise
Lost	And in herself complete, so well to know		(Though higher of the genial bed by far,	Lost
	Her own, that what she wills to do or say,		And with mysterious reverence I deem)	
8.550	Seems wisest, virtuouses, discreetest, best.	80	So much delights me, as those graceful acts,	8.600

With second thoughts, reforming what was old!

Milton For what God, after better, worse would build?

Paradise Terrestrial Heaven, danced round by other Heavens

Lost That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,

105 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,
In thee concentrating all their precious beams
Of sacred influence! As God in Heaven
Is center, yet extends to all; so thou,
Centring, receivest from all those orbs: in thee,
110 Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears

F222 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
Of creatures animate with gradual life
Of growth, sense, reason, all summed up in Man.
With what delight could I have walked thee round,

115 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange
Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
Now land, now sea and shores with forest crowned,
Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these
Find place or refuge; and the more I see

120 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
Of contraries: all good to me becomes
Bane, and in Heaven much worse would be my state.

S218 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heaven

125 To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme;

L1[O] Nor hope to be myself less miserable

A By what I seek, but others to make such
As I, though thereby worse to me redound:
For only in destroying I find ease

130 To my relentless thoughts; and, him destroyed,
Or won to what may work his utter loss,
For whom all this was made, all this will soon
Follow, as to him linked in weal or woe;
In woe then; that destruction wide may range.

135 To me shall be the glory sole among
The infernal Powers, in one day to have marred
What he, Almighty styled, six nights and days
Continued making, and who knows how long

♦ Before had been contriving? though perhaps

140 Not longer than since I, in one night, freed
From servitude inglorious well nigh half
The angelick name, and thinner left the throng

F223 Of his adorers. He, to be avenged,
And to repair his numbers thus impaired,

145 Whether such virtue spent of old now failed
More Angels to create — if they at least
Are his created — or, to spite us more,
Determined to advance into our room
A creature formed of earth, and him endow,

9.150 Exalted from so base original,

78

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's
First Edition (in 10 books)
printed by Peter Parker (1667).
The First Edition does not
number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's
Second Edition (in 12 books)
printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 9

PREVIEW
Book 10



A 1L 1 - 150
B 2L 151 - 550
C 3L 551 - 1150
D 1L 1151 - 1189

1

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

1

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 1189 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
81 to 94

81

NO more of talk where God or Angel guest
 With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd,
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast; permitting him the while
 5 Venial discourse unblam'd. I now must change
 Those notes to tragick; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
 And disobedience; on the part of Heaven
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 10 Anger and just rebuke, and judgement given,
 That brought into this world a world of woe,
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery
 Death's harbinger: sad talk! yet argument
 @ Not less but more heroick than the wrath
 F219 Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd;
 Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long
 Perplexed the Greek, and Cytherea's son;
 20 If answerable style I can obtain
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns
 S215 Her nightly visitation, unimplor'd,
 And dictates to me slumbering; or inspires
 Easy my unpremeditated verse,
 25 Since first this subject for heroick song
 L1[I] Pleas'd me, long choosing and beginning late;
 A Not sedulous by nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only argument
 Heroick deem'd chief mastery to dissect
 30 With long and tedious havock, fabled knights,
 In battles feign'd; the better fortitude
 Of patience and heroick martyrdom
 Unsung; or to describe races and games,
 Or tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,
 35 Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds,
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
 At joust and tournament; then marshall'd feast
 Serv'd up in hall with sewers and seneshals;
 ♦ The skill of artifice or office mean,
 40 Not that which justly gives heroick name
 To person or to poem. Me, of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument
 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 45 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing
 Milton Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine,
 F220 Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear.
 Paradise The sun was sunk, and after him the star
 Lost Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring
 9.50 Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter

79 (57c)

2 (1c)

2

82

'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round:
 When Satan, who late fled before the threats
 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent 55
 On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap S216
 Of heavier on himself, fearless returned.
 By nighthe fled, and at midnight returned,
 From compassing the earth; cautious of day,
 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried 60
 His entrance, and forewarned the Cherubim
 That kept their watch. Thence full of anguish driven,
 The space of seven continued nights he rode
 With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line
 He circled; four times crossed the car of night 65
 From pole to pole, traversing each colure;
 On the eighth returned; and, on the coast averse
 From entrance or Cherubick watch, by stealth
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,
 Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change, 70
 Where Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part
 Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.
 In with the river sunk, and with it rose
 Satan, involved in rising mist; then sought 75
 Where to lie hid. Sea he had searched, and land, L1[I]
 From Eden over Pontus, and the pool A
 Maeotis, up beyond the river Ob;
 Downward as far antarctick; and in length, F221
 West from Orontes to the ocean barred 80
 At Darien; thence to the land where flows
 Ganges and Indus. Thus the orb he roamed
 With narrow search; and with inspection deep
 Considered every creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his wiles; and found 85
 The Serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
 Him after long debate, irresolute
 Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence chose
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide S217 90
 From sharpest sight; for, in the wily snake
 Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,
 As from his wit and native subtlety
 Proceeding; which, in other beasts observed,
 Doubt might beget of diabolick power 95
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute. Milton
 Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief Paradise
 His bursting passion into plaints thus poured: Lost
 "O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferred
 More justly, seat worthier of Gods, as built 9.100

	With burnished neck of verdant gold, erect	80 (58c)	With heavenly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed,	
Milton	Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass		He effected; Man he made, and for him built	Milton
Paradise	Floated redundant. Pleasing was his shape		Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,	Paradise
Lost	And lovely; never since of serpent-kind		Him lord pronounced, and, O indignity!	Lost
505	Lovelier, not those that in Illyria changed,		Subjected to his service angel-wings,	155
	Hermione and Cadmus, or the god		And flaming ministers to watch and tend	
	In Epidaurus; nor to which transformed		Their earthly charge: Of these the vigilance	
	Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline, was seen,		I dread; and to elude, thus wrapt in mist	S219
	He with Olympias; this with her who bore		Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry	
510	Scipio, the highth of Rome. With tract oblique		In every bush and brake, where hap may find	160
	At first, as one who sought access, but feared		The serpent sleeping; in whose mazy folds	
	To interrupt, side-long he works his way.		To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.	
	As when a ship, by skilful steersmen wrought		O foul descent! that I, who erst contended	
	Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind		With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrained	
515	Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail:		Into a beast; and, mixed with bestial slime,	165
	So varied he, and of his tortuous train		This essence to incarnate and imbrute,	
	Curled many a wanton wreath, in sight of Eve,		That to the highth of Deity aspired!	
	To lure her eye. She, busied, heard the sound		But what will not ambition and revenge	
	Of rusling leaves, but minded not, as used		Descend to? Who aspires, must down as low	
520	To such disport before her through the field,		As high he soared; obnoxious, first or last,	170
	From every beast; more duteous at her call,		To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,	
	Than at Circean call the herd disguised.		Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils.	
	He, bolder now, uncalled before her stood,		Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aimed,	
	But as in gaze admiring: oft he bowed		Since higher I fall short, on him who next	
525	His turret crest, and sleek enamelled neck,		Provokes my envy, this new favourite	F224
L1[O]	Fawning; and licked the ground whereon she trod.		Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,	L1[O]
B F235	His gentle dumb expression turned at length		Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker raised	B
	The eye of Eve to mark his play; he, glad		From dust: Spite then with spite is best repaid."	
	Of her attention gained, with serpent-tongue		So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,	
530	Organick, or impulse of vocal air,		Like a black mist low-creeping, he held on	180
	His fraudulent temptation thus began:		His midnight-search, where soonest he might find	
S230	"Wonder not, sovran Mistress — if perhaps	3 (2c)	The serpent. Him fast-sleeping soon he found	
	Thou canst, who art sole wonder — much less arm		In labyrinth of many a round self-rolled,	
	Thy looks, the Heaven of mildness, with disdain,		His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles:	
535	Displeased that I approach thee thus, and gaze		Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,	185
	Insatiate, I thus single, nor have feared		Nor nocent yet; but, on the grassy herb,	
	Thy awful brow, more awful thus retired.		Fearless unfeared, he slept. In at his mouth	
	Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair!		The Devil entered; and his brutal sense,	
♦	Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine	3	In heart or head, possessing soon inspired	
540	By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore		With act intelligential; but his sleep	190
	With ravishment beheld, there best beheld,		Disturbed not, waiting close the approach of morn.	
	Where universally admired; but here		Now, when as sacred light began to dawn	S220
	In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,		In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathed	
	Beholders rude, and shallow to discern		Their morning incense, when all things that breathe,	
545	Half what in thee is fair, one man except,		From the Earth's great altar send up silent praise	195
	Who sees thee? and what is one? who should be seen		To the Creator, and his nostrils fill	
	A Goddess among Gods, adored and served		With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,	
	By Angels numberless, thy daily train."		And joined their vocal worship to the quire	
	So glozed the Tempter, and his proem tuned:		Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake	
9.550	Into the heart of Eve his words made way,	83	The season prime for sweetest scents and airs.	9.200

Then commune, how that day they best may ply
 Their growing work; for much their work out-grew
 The hands' dispatch of two, gardening so wide,
 And Eve first to her husband thus began:

205 "Adam, well may we labour still to dress
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,
 F225 Our pleasant task enjoined; but, till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint; what we by day

210 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,
 One night or two with wanton growth derides
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present:
 Let us divide our labours; thou, where choice

215 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
 The woodbine round this arbour, or direct
 The clasping ivy where to climb; while I,
 In yonder spring of roses intermixed
 With myrtle, find what to redress till noon;

220 For, while so near each other thus all day
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on! which intermits
 Our day's work, brought to little, though begun

225 Early, and the hour of supper comes unearned."
 L1[I] S221 To whom mild answer Adam thus returned:
 B "Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear!
 Well hast thou motioned, well thy thoughts employed,

230 How we might best fulfil the work which here
 God hath assigned us; nor of me shalt pass
 Unpraised: for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.

235 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse

♦ F226 Of looks and smiles; for smiles from reason flow,
 240 To brute denied, and are of love the food,
 Love, not the lowest end of human life;
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight,
 He made us, and delight to reason joined.

These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands

245 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide
 Milton As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Paradise Assist us. But, if much converse perhaps
 Lost Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield;
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 9.250 And short retirement urges sweet return.

81 (59C)

4 (3C)

4

84

**Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound;
 If chance, with nymph-like step, fair virgin pass,
 What pleasing seemed, for her now pleases more;
 She most, and in her look sums all delight:**

Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold 455
 This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 Thus early, thus alone. Her heavenly form
 Angelick, but more soft, and feminine,
 Her graceful innocence, her every air

Of gesture, or least action overawed 460
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereaved
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.
 That space the Evil-one abstracted stood F233
 From his own evil, and for the time remained S228
 Stupidly good; of enmity disarmed, 465
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid-Heaven, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees

Of pleasure, not for him ordained. Then soon 470
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites:
 "Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what sweet
 Compulsion thus transported, to forget
 What hither brought us! hate, not love; nor hope 475
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste L1[I]
 Of pleasure; but all pleasure to destroy, B
 Save what is in destroying; other joy
 To me is lost. Then, let me not let pass
 Occasion which now smiles. Behold alone 480
 The woman, opportune to all attempts,
 Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb

Heroick built, though of terrestrial mould; 485
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 I not; so much hath Hell debased, and pain
 Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods!
 Not terrible, though terrour be in love 490
 And beauty, not approached by stronger hate,
 Hate stronger, under show of love well feigned;
 The way which to her ruin now I tend."

So spake the Enemy of Mankind, enclosed
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve F234
 Addressed his way; not with indented wave, Milton
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear, Paradise
 Circular base of rising folds, that towered S229
 Fold above fold, a surging maze, his head Lost
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; 9.500

To be returned by noon amid the bower,
Milton And all things in best order to invite
Paradise Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
Lost O much deceived, much failing, hapless Eve,
405 Of thy presumed return! event perverse!
Thou never from that hour in Paradise
Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose;
Such ambush, hid among sweet flowers and shades,
Waited with hellish rancour imminent
410 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
Despoiled of innocence, of faith, of bliss.
For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,
Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come;
And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
415 The only two of mankind, but in them
The whole included race, his purposed prey.
In bower and field he sought, where any tuft
Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
Their tendance, or plantation for delight;
420 By fountain or by shady rivulet
He sought them both, but wished his hap might find
Eve separate; he wished, but not with hope
Of what so seldom chanced; when to his wish,
Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
425 Veiled in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,
L2[O] Half spied, so thick the roses blushing round
B About her glowed, oft stooping to support
Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay
Carnation, purple, azure, or specked with gold,
430 **S227** Hung drooping unsustained; them she upstays
F232 Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while
Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed
435 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm;
Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen,
Among thick-woven arborets, and flowers
Imbordered on each bank, the hand of Eve:
♦ Spot more delicious than those gardens feigned
440 Or of revived Adonis, or renowned
Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,
Or that, not mystick, where the sapient king
Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.
Much he the place admired, the person more.
445 **As one who long in populous city pent,**
Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,
Forth issuing on a summer's morn, to breathe
Among the pleasant villages and farms
Adjoined, from each thing met conceives delight,
9.450 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine,

82 (60c)

5 (4c)

5

85

But other doubt possesses me, lest harm
Befall thee severed from me; for thou knowest
What hath been warned us, what malicious foe
Milton Envyng our happiness, and of his own
Paradise Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame
Lost 255 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
His wish and best advantage, us asunder;
Hopeless to circumvent us joined, where each
To other speedy aid might lend at need. **S222** 260
Whether his first design be to withdraw
Our fealty from God, or to disturb
Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss
Enjoyed by us excites his envy more;
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 265
That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.
The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures."
To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, 270
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets, **F227**
With sweet austere composure thus replied:
"Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth's Lord!
That such an enemy we have, who seeks
Our ruin, both by thee informed I learn, 275
And from the parting Angel overheard, **L2[O]**
As in a shady nook I stood behind, **B**
Just then returned at shut of evening flowers. **▼7K**
But, that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
To God or thee, because we have a foe 280
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
His violence thou fearest not, being such
As we, not capable of death or pain,
Can either not receive, or can repel.
His fraud is then thy fear; which plain infers 285
Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love
Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced;
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast?
Adam, mis-thought of her to thee so dear!"
To whom with healing words Adam replied: 290
"Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve!
For such thou art; from sin and blame entire:
Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid **S223**
The attempt itself; intended by our foe. 295
For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses
The tempted with dishonour foul, supposed
Not incorruptible of faith, not proof
Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn
And anger wouldst resent the offered wrong, **9.300**

▼2/3

Though ineffectual found; misdeem not then,
 If such affront I labour to avert
F228 From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
 305 Or daring, first on me the assault shall light.
 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;
 Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce
 Angel; nor think superfluous other's aid.
 I, from the influence of thy looks, receive
 310 Access in every virtue; in thy sight
 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or overreached,
 Would utmost vigour raise, and raised unite.
 315 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel
 When I am present, and thy trial choose
 With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?"
 So spake domestick Adam in his care
 And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought
 320 Less attributed to her faith sincere,
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renewed:
 "If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit straitened by a foe,
 Subtle or violent, we not endued
 325 Single with like defence, wherever met,
L2[I] How are we happy, still in fear of harm?
B But harm precedes not sin. Only our foe,
S224 Tempting, affronts us with his foul esteem
 Of our integrity: his foul esteem
 330 Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns
 Foul on himself; then wherefore shunned or feared
 By us? who rather double honour gain
 From his surmise proved false; find peace within,
 Favour from Heaven, our witness, from the event.
F229 And what is faith, love, virtue, unassayed
 Alone, without exterior help sustained?
 Let us not then suspect our happy state
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 ♦ As not secure to single or combined.
 340 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,
 And Eden were no Eden, thus exposed."
 To whom thus Adam fervently replied:
 "O Woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordained them; his creating hand
 345 Nothing imperfect or deficient left
Milton Of all that he created, much less Man,
Paradise Or aught that might his happy state secure,
Lost Secure from outward force; within himself
 The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
 9.350 Against his will he can receive no harm.

83 (61c)

6 (5c)

6

86

But God left free the will, for what obeys
 Reason, is free; and Reason he made right,
 But bid her well beware, and still erect,
 Lest, by some fair-appearing good surprised,
 She dictate false; and misinform the will 355
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins,
 That I should mind thee oft; and mind thou me.
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve;
 Since Reason not impossibly may meet 360
 Some specious object by the foe suborned,
 And fall into deception unaware, **S225**
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warned.
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid
 Were better, and most likely if from me 365
 Thou sever not; trial will come unsought.
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve **F230**
 First thy obedience; the other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
 But if thou think trial unsought may find 370
 Us both securer than thus warned thou seemest,
 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more.
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue; summon all;
 For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine." 375
 So spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve **L2[I]**
 Persisted; yet submiss, though last, replied: **B**
 "With thy permission then, and thus forewarned
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 Touched only, that our trial, when least sought, 380
 May find us both perhaps far less prepared,
 The willinger I go, nor much expect
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse."
 Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand 385
 Soft she withdrew, and, **like a Wood-Nymph light,**
Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,
 Betook her to the groves; but Delia's self
 In gait surpassed, and Goddess-like deport,
 Though not as she with bow and quiver armed, 390
 But with such gardening tools as **Art yet** rude,
 Guiltless of fire, had formed, or Angels brought.
 To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorned,
 Likest she seemed, Pomona when she fled
 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime, 395
 Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove. **S226 Milton**
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursued **Paradise**
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay. **Lost**
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return **F231**
 Repeated; she to him as oft engaged **9.400**

Milton The fig-tree; not that kind for fruit renowned,
Paradise But **such as at this day, to Indians known,**
F253 **In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms**
Lost **Branching so broad and long, that in the ground**
1105 **The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow**
About the mother tree, a pillared shade
High overarched, and echoing walks between:
There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,
Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds
1110 S247 **At loop-holes cut through thickest shade:** Those leaves
They gathered, broad **as Amazonian targe;**
And, with what skill they had, together sewed,
To gird their waist; vain covering, if to hide
Their guilt and dreaded shame! O, how unlike
1115 To that first naked glory! **Such of late**
Columbus found the American, so girt
With feathered cincture, naked else and wild,
Among the trees on isles and woody shores.
Thus fenced, and, as they thought, their shame in part
1120 Covered, but not at rest or ease of mind,
They sat them down to weep; nor only tears
Rained at their eyes, but high winds worse within
Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,
Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore
1125 Their inward state of mind, calm region once
L1[O] And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:
C For Understanding ruled not, and the Will
Heard not her lore; both in subjection now
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath
1130 Usurping over sovran Reason claimed
Superior sway. From thus distempered breast,
Adam, estranged in look and altered style,
Speech intermitted thus to Eve renewed:
“Would thou hadst hearkened to my words, and staid
F254 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
Desire of wandering, this unhappy morn,
I know not whence possessed thee; we had then
Remained still happy; not, as now, despoiled
♦ Of all our good; shamed, naked, miserable!
1140 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve
The faith they owe; when earnestly they seek
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.”
To whom, soon moved with touch of blame, thus Eve:
S248 “What words have passed thy lips, Adam severe?
1145 Imputest thou that to my default, or will
Of wandering, as thou callest it, which who knows
But might as ill have happened thou being by,
Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,
Or here the attempt, thou couldst not have discerned
9.1150 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake;

84 (62C)

7 (6C)

7

87

Though at the voice much marvelling; at length,
Not unamazed, she thus in answer spake: Milton
“What may this mean? language of man pronounced Paradise
By tongue of brute, and human sense expressed? Lost
The first, at least, of these I thought denied 555
To beasts; whom God, on their creation-day,
Created mute to all articulate sound:
The latter I demur; for in their looks
Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears. F236
Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560
I knew, but not with human voice endued.
Redouble then this miracle, and say,
How camest thou speakable of mute, and how
To me so friendly grown above the rest
Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight? 565
Say, for such wonder claims attention due.” S231
To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied:
“Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve!
Easy to me it is to tell thee all
What thou commandest; and right thou shouldst be obeyed. 570
I was at first as other beasts that graze
The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
As was my food; nor aught but food discerned
Or sex, and apprehended nothing high:
Till, on a day roving the field, I chanced 575
A goodly tree far distant to behold L1[O]
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixed, C
Ruddy and gold. I nearer drew to gaze;
When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,
Grateful to appetite, more pleased my sense 580
Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats
Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,
Unsucked of lamb or kid, that tend their play.
To satisfy the sharp desire I had
Of tasting those fair apples I resolved 585
Not to defer; hunger and thirst at once,
Powerful persuaders, quickened at the scent
Of that alluring fruit, urged me so keen.
About the mossy trunk I wound me soon;
For, high from ground, the branches would require 590
Thy utmost reach or Adam’s: round the tree F237
All other beasts that saw, with like desire
Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung
Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill 595
I spared not, for such pleasure till that hour
At feed or fountain, never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
Strange alteration in me, to degree
Of reason in my inward powers; and speech S232 9.600

	Wanted not long; though to this shape retained. Thenceforth to speculations high or deep I turned my thoughts, and with capacious mind Considered all things visible in Heaven,	85 (63c)	Incumbered, now had left them, up they rose As from unrest, and, each the other viewing, Soon found their eyes how opened, and their minds How darkened. Innocence, that as a veil	
605	Or Earth, or Middle; all things fair and good. But all that fair and good in thy divine Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray, United I beheld; no fair to thine Equivalent or second! which compelled		Had shadowed them from knowing ill, was gone; Just confidence, and native righteousness, And honour, from about them, naked left To guilty Shame; he covered, but his robe Uncovered more. So rose the Danite strong, Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap	1055 1060
610	Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come And gaze, and worship thee of right declared Sovran of creatures, universal Dame!" So talked the spirited sly Snake, and Eve, Yet more amazed, unwary thus replied:		Of Philistean Dalilah, and waked Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare Of all their virtue. Silent, and in face Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute;	
615	"Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt The virtue of that fruit, in thee first proved. But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far? For many are the trees of God that grow In Paradise, and various, yet unknown		Till Adam, though not less than Eve abashed, At length gave utterance to these words constrained: "O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear To that false worm, of whomsoever taught To counterfeit Man's voice; true in our fall,	1065 1070
620	To us, in such abundance lies our choice, As leaves a greater store of fruit untouched, Still hanging incorruptible, till men		False in our promised rising; since our eyes Opened we find indeed, and find we know Both good and evil; good lost, and evil got; Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know; Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,	F252
F238	Grow up to their provision, and more hands Help to disburden Nature of her birth." To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad:		Of innocence, of faith, of purity,	1075
625	"Empress, the way is ready, and not long; Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat, Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past Of blowing myrrh and balm. If thou accept		Our wonted ornaments now soiled and stained, And in our faces evident the signs Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store; Even shame, the last of evils; of the first	S246 L1[I] C
630	My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon." "Lead then," said Eve. He, leading, swiftly rolled In tangles, and made intricate seem straight, To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy Brightens his crest. As when a wandering fire,	8 (7c)	Be sure then. How shall I behold the face Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy And rapture so oft beheld? Those heavenly shapes Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze Insufferably bright. O! might I here In solitude live savage; in some glade Obscured, where highest woods, impenetrable To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad And brown as evening: Cover me, ye Pines! Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs Hide me, where I may never see them more! — But let us now, as in bad plight, devise What best may for the present serve to hide The parts of each from other, that seem most To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen; Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sewed, And girded on our loins, may cover round Those middle parts, that this new comer, Shame, There sit not, and reproach us as unclean."	1080 1085 1090
S233	Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night Condenses, and the cold environs round, Kindled through agitation to a flame, Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends, Hovering and blazing with delusive light,	8		
635	Misleads the amazed night-wanderer from his way To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool; There swallowed up and lost, from succour far: So glistened the dire Snake, and into fraud Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree			
645	Of prohibition, root of all our woe; Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake: "Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither, Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess, The credit of whose virtue rest with thee; Wonderous indeed, if cause of such effects.			
Milton			So counselled he, and both together went Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose	1095 Milton Paradise Lost 9.1100
Paradise				
Lost				
9.650		88		

	In pangs; and Nature gave a second groan;	86 (64c)	But of this tree we may not taste nor touch;	
Milton	Sky loured; and, muttering thunder, some sad drops		God so commanded, and left that command	Milton
Paradise	Wept at completing of the mortal sin		Sole daughter of his voice; the rest, we live	Paradise
Lost	Original; while Adam took no thought,		Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.”	Lost
1005	Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate		To whom the Tempter guilefully replied:	F239
	Her former trespass feared, the more to soothe		“Indeed! hath God then said that of the fruit	
F250	Him with her loved society; that now,		Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat,	
S244	As with new wine intoxicated both,		Yet Lords declared of all in earth or air?”	
	They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel		To whom thus Eve, yet sinless: “Of the fruit	
1010	Divinity within them breeding wings,		Of each tree in the garden we may eat;	660
	Wherewith to scorn the earth. But that false fruit		But of the fruit of this fair tree, amidst	
	Far other operation first displayed,		The garden, God hath said, ‘Ye shall not eat	
	Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve		Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.’”	
	Began to cast lascivious eyes; she him		She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold	
1015	As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn,		The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love	665
	Till Adam thus ’gan Eve to dalliance move:		To Man, and indignation at his wrong,	
	“Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,		New part puts on; and, as to passion moved,	
	And elegant, of sapience no small part;		Fluctuates disturbed, yet comely, and in act	S234
	Since to each meaning savour we apply,		Raised, as of some great matter to begin.	
1020	And palate call judicious. I the praise		As when of old some orator renowned,	670
	Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purveyed.		In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence	
	Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstained		Flourished, since mute, to some great cause addressed,	
	From this delightful fruit, nor known till now		Stood in himself collected; while each part,	
	True relish, tasting. If such pleasure be		Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue;	
1025	In things to us forbidden, it might be wished,		Sometimes in highth began, as no delay	675
L2[O]	For this one tree had been forbidden ten.		Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right:	L2[O]
C	But come, so well refreshed, now let us play,		So standing, moving, or to highth up grown,	C
	As meet is, after such delicious fare;		The Tempter, all impassioned, thus began:	
	For never did thy beauty, since the day		“O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,	
1030	I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorned		Mother of science! now I feel thy power	680
	With all perfections, so inflame my sense		Within me clear; not only to discern	
	With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now	9 (8c)	Things in their causes, but to trace the ways	
	Than ever; bounty of this virtuous tree!”		Of highest agents, deemed however wise.	
	So said he, and forbore not glance or toy		Queen of this universe! do not believe	
1035	Of amorous intent, well understood		Those rigid threats of death. Ye shall not die.	685
	Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.		How should you? by the fruit? it gives you life	
	Her hand he seised; and to a shady bank,		To knowledge; by the threatener? look on me,	F240
	Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowered,		Me, who have touched and tasted; yet both live,	
F251 ♦	He led her nothing loth; flowers were the couch,	9	And life more perfect have attained than Fate	@
1040	Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,		Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.	690
	And hyacinth; Earth’s freshest softest lap.		Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast	
S245	There they their fill of love and love’s disport		Is open? or will God incense his ire	
	Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,		For such a petty trespass? and not praise	
	The solace of their sin; till dewy sleep		Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain	
1045	Oppressed them, wearied with their amorous play.		Of death denounced, whatever thing death be,	695
	Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,		Deterred not from achieving what might lead	
	That with exhilarating vapour bland		To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;	
	About their spirits had played, and inmost powers		Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil	
	Made err, was now exhaled; and grosser sleep,		Be real, why not known, since easier shunned?	
9.1050	Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams	89	God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;	9.700

	Not just, not God; not feared then, nor obeyed:	87 (65c)	Matter of scorn, not to be given the Foe.	
S235	Your fear itself of death removes the fear.		However I with thee have fixed my lot,	
	Why then was this forbid? Why, but to awe;		Certain to undergo like doom; if death	
	Why, but to keep ye low and ignorant,		Consort with thee, death is to me as life;	
705	His worshippers? He knows that in the day		So forcible within my heart I feel	955
	Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,		The bond of Nature draw me to my own;	
	Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then		My own in thee, for what thou art is mine.	
	Opened and cleared, and ye shall be as Gods,		Our state cannot be severed; we are one,	
	Knowing both good and evil, as they know.		One flesh; to lose thee were to lose myself."	
710	That ye shall be as Gods, since I as Man,		So Adam; and thus Eve to him replied:	960
	Internal Man, is but proportion meet;		"O glorious trial of exceeding love,	
	I, of brute, human; ye, of human, Gods.		Illustrious evidence, example high!	
	So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off		Engaging me to emulate; but, short	
	Human, to put on Gods; death to be wished,		Of thy perfection, how shall I attain?	
715	Though threatened, which no worse than this can bring.		Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung,	965
	And what are Gods, that Man may not become		And gladly of our union hear thee speak,	
@	As they, participating God-like food?		One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof	
	The Gods are first, and that advantage use		This day affords, declaring thee resolved,	
F241	On our belief, that all from them proceeds.		Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,	
720	I question it; for this fair earth I see,		Shall separate us, linked in love so dear,	970
	Warmed by the sun, producing every kind;		To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,	
	Them, nothing. If they all things, who enclosed		If any be, of tasting this fair fruit;	
	Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,		Whose virtue — for of good still good proceeds,	
	That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains		Direct, or by occasion — hath presented	S243
725	Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies		This happy trial of thy love, which else	F249
L2[I]	The offence, that Man should thus attain to know?		So eminently never had been known.	L2[I]
C	What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree		Were it I thought death menaced would ensue	C
	Impart against his will, if all be his?		This my attempt, I would sustain alone	
	Or is it envy? and can envy dwell		The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die	
730	In heavenly breasts? These, these, and many more		Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact	980
	Causes import your need of this fair fruit.		Pernicious to thy peace; chiefly assured	
	Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste!"	10 (9c)	Remarkably so late of thy so true,	
	He ended; and his words, replete with guile,		So faithful, love unequalled: but I feel	
	Into her heart too easy entrance won.		Far otherwise the event; not death, but life	
735	Fixed on the fruit she gazed, which to behold		Augmented, opened eyes, new hopes, new joys,	985
S236	Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound		Taste so divine, that what of sweet before	
	Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd		Hath touched my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.	
	With reason, to her seeming, and with truth.		On my experience, Adam, freely taste,	
♦	Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked	10	And fear of death deliver to the winds."	
740	An eager appetite, raised by the smell		So saying, she embraced him, and for joy	990
	So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,		Tenderly wept; much won, that he his love	
	Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,		Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur	
	Solicited her longing eye; yet first		Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.	
	Pausing a while, thus to herself she mused:		In recompence — for such compliance bad	
745	"Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,		Such recompence best merits — from the bough	995
Milton	Though kept from man, and worthy to be admired;		She gave him of that fair enticing fruit	Milton
Paradise	Whose taste, too long forborne, at first assay		With liberal hand. He scrupled not to eat,	Paradise
Lost	Gave elocution to the mute, and taught		Against his better knowledge; not deceived,	Lost
	The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise.		But fondly overcome with female charm.	
9.750	Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use	90	Earth trembled from her entrails, as again	9.1000

	Defaced, deflowered, and now to death devote!	88 (66c)	Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree	F242
Milton	Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress		Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;	Milton
Paradise	The strict forbiddance, how to violate		Forbids us then to taste! but his forbidding	Paradise
Lost	The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursed fraud		Commends thee more, while it infers the good	Lost
905	Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown,		By thee communicated, and our want:	755
S241	And me with thee hath ruined; for with thee		For good unknown sure is not had; or, had	
	Certain my resolution is to die.		And yet unknown, is as not had at all.	
	How can I live without thee! how forego		In plain then, what forbids he but to know?	
	Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly joined,		Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise.	
910	To live again in these wild woods forlorn!		Such prohibitions bind not. But if death	760
F247	Should God create another Eve, and I		Bind us with after-bands, what profits then	
	Another rib afford, yet loss of thee		Our inward freedom? In the day we eat	
	Would never from my heart. No, no! I feel		Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.	
^^5K	The link of Nature draw me: flesh of flesh,		How dies the Serpent? he hath eaten and lives,	
915	Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state		And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,	765
	Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.”		Irrational till then. For us alone	
	So having said, as one from sad dismay		Was death invented? or to us denied	
	Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbed		This intellectual food, for beasts reserved?	
	Submitting to what seemed remediless,		For beasts it seems; yet that one beast, which first	
920	Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turned:		Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy	S237 770
	“Bold deed thou hast presumed, adventurous Eve,		The good befallen him, author unsuspect,	
	And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared,		Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile,	
	Had it been only coveting to eye		What fear I then? rather, what know to fear	
	That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,		Under this ignorance of good and evil,	
925	Much more to taste it under ban to touch.		Of God or death, of law or penalty?	775
L3[O]	But past who can recall, or done undo?		Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,	L3[O]
C	Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate. Yet so		Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,	C
	Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact		Of virtue to make wise. What hinders then	
	Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,		To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?”	
930	Profaned first by the Serpent, by him first		So saying, her rash hand in evil hour	780
	Made common, and unhallowed, ere our taste,		Forth reaching to the fruit, she plucked, she eat.	
	Nor yet on him found deadly; yet he lives;	11 (10c)	Earth felt the wound; and Nature from her seat,	
	Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live, as Man,		Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,	F243
	Higher degree of life; inducement strong		That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk	
935	To us, as likely tasting to attain		The guilty Serpent; and well might, for Eve,	785
	Proportional ascent; which cannot be		Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else	
	But to be Gods, or Angels, demi-Gods.		Regarded; such delight till then, as seemed,	
	Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,		In fruit she never tasted, whether true	
♦	Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy	11	Or fancied so, through expectation high	
940 S242	Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,		Of knowledge; not was Godhead from her thought.	790
	Set over all his works, which in our fall,		Greedily she ingorged without restraint,	
	For us created, needs with us must fail,		And knew not eating death. Sate at length,	
F248	Dependant made; so God shall uncreate,		And hightened as with wine, jocund and boon,	
	Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose;		Thus to herself she pleasingly began:	
945	Not well conceived of God, who, though his power		“O sovran, virtuous, precious of all trees	795
	Creation could repeat, yet would be loth		In Paradise! of operation blest	
	Us to abolish, lest the Adversary		To sapience, hitherto obscured, infamed.	
	Triumph, and say; ‘Fickle their state whom God		And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end	
	Most favours; who can please him long? Me first		Created; but henceforth my early care,	
9.950	He ruined, now Mankind; whom will he next?’	91	Not without song, each morning, and due praise,	9.800

Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
 Of thy full branches offered free to all;
 Till, dieted by thee, I grow mature
 S238 In knowledge, as the Gods, who all things know.
 805 Though others envy what they cannot give.
 For, had the gift been theirs, it had not here
 Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,
 Best guide; not following thee, I had remained
 In ignorance; thou openest Wisdom's way,
 810 And givest access, though secret she retire.
 And I perhaps am secret. Heaven is high,
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps
 May have diverted from continual watch
 F244 Our great Forbidder, safe with all his spies
 About him. But to Adam in what sort
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 820 But keeps the odds of knowledge in my power
 Without copartner? so to add what wants
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 825 Superior; for, inferior, who is free
 L3[I] This may be well. — But what if God have seen,
 C And death ensue? then I shall be no more,
 And Adam, wedded to another Eve,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 830 A death to think! Confirmed then I resolve,
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe.
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.”
 So saying, from the tree her step she turned;
 835 But first low reverence done, as to the Power
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infused
 Into the plant scintillating sap, derived
 S239 From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while,
 ♦ Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 840 Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn
 Her tresses, and her rural labors crown;
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest-queen.
 Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new
 ^3K Solace in her return, so long delayed:
 845 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
 Milton Misgave him; he the faltering measure felt,
 F245 And forth to meet her went, the way she took
 Paradise That morn when first they parted. By the Tree
 Lost Of Knowledge he must pass; there he her met,
 9.850 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand

89 (67c)

12 (11c)

12

92

A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smiled,
 New gathered, and ambrosial smell diffused.
 To him she hasted; in her face excuse
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt,
 Which, with bland words at will, she thus addressed: 855
 “Hast thou not wondered, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have missed, and thought it long, deprived
 Thy presence; agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought, 860
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear.
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Opening the way, but of divine effect 865
 To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,
 Or not restrained as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit; and is become,
 Not dead, as we are threatened, but thenceforth 870
 Endued with human voice and human sense,
 Reasoning to admiration; and with me
 Persuasively hath so prevailed, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 The effects to correspond; opener mine eyes, 875
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,
 L3[I] And growing up to Godhead; which for thee
 C Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise:
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss; F246
 Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon. 880
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love;
 Lest, thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.” 885
 Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glowed.
 On the other side, Adam, soon as he heard
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill 890
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relaxed;
 From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve
 Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed:
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke: 895
 “O fairest of Creation, last and best
 Milton Of all God's works, Creature in whom excelled
 Paradise Whatever can to sight or thought be formed,
 Lost Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
 9.900 How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost, 9.900

Or to each other; but apparent guilt,
Milton And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
Paradise Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.
Lost Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answered brief:
S255 "I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice
 Afraid, being naked, hid myself." To whom
 The gracious Judge without revile replied:
 "My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not feared,
 120 But still rejoiced; how is it now become
 So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked who
 Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?"
 To whom thus Adam sore beset replied:
 125 "O Heaven! in evil strait this day I stand
 Before my Judge; either to undergo
 Myself the total crime, or to accuse
 My other self, the partner of my life,
 Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,
 130 I should conceal, and not expose to blame
 By my complaint. But strict necessity
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,
 Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
 However insupportable, be all
 135 Devolved; though should I hold my peace, yet thou
 Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.
L1[O] This Woman, whom thou madest to be my help,
D And gavest me as thy perfect gift, so good,
 So fit, so acceptable, so divine,
 140 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
 And what she did, whatever in itself,
 Her doing seemed to justify the deed —
F261 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat."
 To whom the Sovran Presence thus replied:
 145 "Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey
 Before his voice? or was she made thy guide,
 Superior, or but equal, that to her
 Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place
 Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,
10.150 And for thee, whose perfection far excelled
S256 Hers in all real dignity? Adorned
 She was indeed, and lovely, to attract
 Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts
 Were such, as under government well seemed;
 155 Unseemly to bear rule; which was thy part
 And person, hadst thou known thyself aright."
 So having said, he thus to Eve in few:
 "Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done?"
 To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelmed,
 160 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge
10.161 Bold or loquacious, thus abashed replied:

90

No ground of enmity between us known,
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm. **Milton**
 Was I to have never parted from thy side? **Paradise**
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib. **Lost**
 Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head, 1155
 Command me absolutely not to go,
 Going into such danger, as thou saidst?
 Too facile then, thou didst not much gainsay,
 Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou been firm and fixed in thy dissent, 1160
 Neither had I transgressed, nor thou with me."
 To whom, then first incensed, Adam replied:
 "Is this the love, is this the recompence
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, expressed
 Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I? 1165
 Who might have lived, and joyed immortal bliss,
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee. **F255**
 And am I now upbraided as the cause
 Of thy transgressing? Not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint. What could I more? 1170
 I warned thee, I admonished thee, foretold
 The danger, and the lurking enemy
 That lay in wait; beyond this, had been force,
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure 1175
 Either to meet no danger, or to find **L1[O]**
 Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps **D**
 I also erred, in overmuch admiring **S249**
 What seemed in thee so perfect, that I thought
 No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue 1180
 The error now, which is become my crime,
 And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall
 Him, who, to worth in women overtrusting,
 Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook;
 And, left to herself, if evil thence ensue, 1185
 She first his weak indulgence will accuse."
 Thus they in mutual accusation spent
 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning;
 13 **M** And of their vain contest appeared no end. **9.1189**
E ANWHILE the heinous and spiteful act **10.1**
 Of Satan, done in Paradise, and how
 He in the Serpent had perverted Eve,
 Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
 Was known in Heaven; for what can 'scape the eye 5
 Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart
 Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just,
 Hindered not Satan to attempt the mind
 Of Man, with strength entire and free will armed,
 Complete to have discovered and repulsed 10
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend. **10.11**

93

"The Serpent me beguiled, and I did eat."

✓¾	For still they knew, and ought to have still remembered,		And destined Man himself to judge Man fallen.”	
S252	The high injunction not to taste that fruit,		So spake the Father; and, unfolding bright	
F257	Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,		Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son	
	Incurred — what could they less? — the penalty;		Blazed forth unclouded Deity: He full	65
	And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.		Resplendent all his Father manifest	
	Up into Heaven from Paradise in haste		Expressed, and thus divinely answered mild:	
	The angelick guards ascended, mute and sad,		“Father Eternal, thine is to decree;	
20	For Man; for of his state by this they knew,		Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will	
	Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen		Supreme; that thou in me, thy Son beloved,	70
	Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news		Mayest ever rest well pleased. I go to judge	
	From Earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeased		On Earth these thy transgressours; but thou knowest,	
	All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare		Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,	
	That time celestial visages, yet, mixed		When time shall be; for so I undertook	
25	With pity, violated not their bliss.		Before thee; and, not repenting, this obtain	75
	About the new-arrived in multitudes		Of right, that I may mitigate their doom	
	The ethereal people ran, to hear and know		On me derived; yet I shall temper so	
	How all befell. They towards the throne supreme,		Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most	
	Accountable, made haste to make appear		Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.	F259
30	With righteous plea their utmost vigilance		Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none	80
	And easily approved; when the Most High		Are to behold the judgement, but the judged,	
	Eternal Father, from his secret cloud		Those two; the third best absent is condemned,	S254
	Amidst in thunder uttered thus his voice:		Convict by flight, and rebel to all law;	
	“Assembled Angels, and ye Powers returned		Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.”	
35	From unsuccessful charge, be not dismayed,		Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose	85
	Nor troubled at these tidings from the Earth,		Of high collateral glory: Him Thrones and Powers,	
L1[I]	Which your sincerest care could not prevent;		Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant,	L1[I]
D	Foretold so lately what would come to pass,		Accompanied to Heaven-gate; from whence	D
	When first this Tempter crossed the gulf from Hell.		Eden, and all the coast in prospect lay.	✓8K
40	I told ye then he should prevail, and speed		Down he descended straight; the speed of Gods	90
	On his bad errand; Man should be seduced		Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes winged.	
	And flattered out of all, believing lies		Now was the sun in western cadence low	
	Against his Maker; no decree of mine		From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,	
	Concurring to necessitate his fall,		To fan the earth now waked, and usher in	
	Or touch with lightest moment of impulse		The evening cool; when he, from wrath more cool,	95
	His free will, to her own inclining left		Came the mild Judge, and Intercessour both,	
F258	In even scale. But fallen he is; and now		To sentence Man. The voice of God they heard	
S253	What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass		Now walking in the garden, by soft winds	
	On his transgression, — death denounced that day?		Brought to their ears, while day declined; they heard,	
10.50	Which he presumes already vain and void,	14	And from his presence hid themselves among	10.100
	Because not yet inflicted, as he feared,		The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God,	
	By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find		Approaching, thus to Adam called aloud:	
	Forbearance no acquittance, ere day end.		“Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet	
	Justice shall not return as bounty scorned.		My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,	♦
55	But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee,		Not pleased, thus entertained with solitude,	105
	Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferred		Where obvious duty erewhile appeared unsought,	
Milton	All judgement, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.		Or come I less conspicuously? or what change	Milton
Paradise	Easy it may be seen that I intend		Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth!”	Paradise
Lost	Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee		He came; and with him Eve, more loth, though first	Lost
60	Man’s friend, his Mediator, his designed		To offend; discountenanced both, and discomposed.	110
10.61	Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,	94	Love was not in their looks, either to God, F260	10.111

Or much more grievous pain? Ye have the account
Milton Of my performance. What remains, ye Gods,
Paradise But up, and enter now into full bliss?"

Lost ♦ So having said, a while he stood, expecting
505 Their universal shout, and high applause,
To fill his ear; when, contrary, he hears
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,
A dismal universal hiss, the sound
Of publick scorn. He wondered, but not long
510 Had leisure, wondering at himself now more.
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining
Each other, till supplanted down he fell

@ A monstrous serpent, on his belly prone,
515 Reluctant, but in vain; a greater power
Now ruled him, punished in the shape he sinned,
According to his doom. He would have spoke,
But hiss for hiss returned with forked tongue
To forked tongue; for now were all transformed
520 Alike, to serpents all, as accessories
To his bold riot. Dreadful was the din
Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now
With complicated monsters head and tail,
5267 Scorpion, and Asp, and Amphisbaena dire,
525 Cerastes horned, Hydrus, and Elops drear,
L1[O] And Dipsas; (not so thick swarmed once the soil
A F273 Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the isle
Ophiusa) but still greatest he the midst,
Now Dragon grown, larger than whom the Sun
530 Ingendered in the Pythian vale or slime,
Huge Python, and his power no less he seemed
Above the rest still to retain. They all
Him followed, issuing forth to the open field,
Where all yet left of that revolted rout,
535 Heaven-fallen, in station stood or just array,
Sublime with expectation when to see
In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief;
They saw, but other sight instead! a crowd
Of ugly serpents. Horror on them fell,
540 And horrid sympathy; for, what they saw,
They felt themselves, now changing. Down their arms,
Down fell both spear and shield; down they as fast,
And the dire hiss renewed, and the dire form
Caught, by contagion, like in punishment,
545 As in their crime. Thus was the applause they meant,
Turned to exploding hiss, triumph to shame,
Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood
A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,
His will who reigns above, to aggravate
10.550 Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that

91

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's
First Edition (in 10 books)
printed by Peter Parker (1667).
The First Edition does not
number pages; line 1.1 is on F1^.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's
Second Edition (in 12 books)
printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 10

PREVIEW
Book 11



.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 1104 lines 3.0

A 3L 1 - 550
B 1L 551 - 750
C 2L 751 - 1104

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
95 to 106

95

◆ MEANWHILE the heinous and despicable act
 5 Of Satan, done in Paradise, and how
 He in the Serpent had perverted Eve,
 Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
 Was known in Heaven; for what can 'scape the eye
 Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart
 Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just,
 Hindered not Satan to attempt the mind
 Of Man, with strength entire and free will armed,
 10 Complete to have discovered and repulsed
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
 For still they knew, and ought to have still remembered,
 ¼ The high injunction not to taste that fruit,
 S252 Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,
 F257 Incurred — what could they less? — the penalty;
 And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.
 Up into Heaven from Paradise in haste
 The angelick guards ascended, mute and sad,
 For Man; for of his state by this they knew,
 20 Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen
 Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news
 From Earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeased
 All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare
 That time celestial visages, yet, mixed
 25 With pity, violated not their bliss.
 L1[I] About the new-arrived in multitudes
 A The ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befell. They towards the throne supreme,
 Accountable, made haste to make appear
 30 With righteous plea their utmost vigilance
 And easily approved; when the Most High
 Eternal Father, from his secret cloud
 2 (1C) Amidst in thunder uttered thus his voice:
 “Assembled Angels, and ye Powers returned
 35 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismayed,
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the Earth,
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent;
 Foretold so lately what would come to pass,
 When first this Tempter crossed the gulf from Hell.
 40 I told ye then he should prevail, and speed
 On his bad errand; Man should be seduced
 And flattered out of all, believing lies
 Against his Maker; no decree of mine
 Concurring to necessitate his fall,
 Milton Or touch with lightest moment of impulse
 Paradise His free will, to her own inclining left
 F258 In even scale. But fallen he is; and now
 S253 What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass
 Lost On his transgression, — death denounced that day?
 10.50 Which he presumes already vain and void,

92 (68C)

2 (1C)

2

96

With what permissive glory since his fall
 Was left him, or false glitter. All amazed
 At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian throng
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wished beheld,
 Their mighty Chief returned: loud was the acclaim. 455
 Forth rushed in haste the great consulting peers, S265
 Raised from their dark Divan, and with like joy
 Congratulant approached him, who with hand
 Silence, and with these words attention, won:
 “Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers; 460
 For in possession such, not only of right,
 I call ye, and declare ye now, returned
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth F271
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit,
 Abominable, accursed, the house of woe, 465
 And dungeon of our tyrant — now possess,
 As Lords, a spacious world, to our native Heaven
 Little inferior, by my adventure hard
 With peril great achieved. Long were to tell
 What I have done, what suffered, with what pain 470
 Voyaged th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
 Of horrible confusion, over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is paved,
 To expedite your glorious march; but I
 Toiled out my uncouth passage, forced to ride 475
 The untractable Abyss, plunged in the womb L1[I]
 Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild, A
 That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely opposed
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproar
 Protesting Fate supreme; thence how I found 480
 The new-created World, which fame in Heaven
 Long had foretold, a fabrick wonderful
 Of absolute perfection; therein Man
 Placed in a Paradise, by our exile
 Made happy. Him by fraud I have seduced 485
 From his Creator, and, the more to increase
 Your wonder, with an apple! He, thereat
 Offended — worth your laughter — hath given up
 Both his beloved Man and all his World
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, S266 490
 Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
 To rule, as over all he should have ruled.
 True is, me also he hath judged, or rather
 Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape @ F272
 Man I deceived. That which to me belongs, Milton
 Is enmity which he will put between Paradise
 Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel; Lost
 His seed — when is not set — shall bruise my head.
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 10.500

	Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declared;	93 (69c)	Because not yet inflicted, as he feared,	
Milton	Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.		By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find	Milton
Paradise	My substitutes I send ye, and create		Forbearance no acquittance, ere day end.	Paradise
Lost ♦	Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might		Justice shall not return as bounty scorned.	Lost
405	Issuing from me. On your joint vigour now		But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee,	55
	My hold of this new kingdom all depends,		Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferred	
	Through Sin to Death exposed by my exploit.		All judgement, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.	
	If your joint power prevail, the affairs of Hell		Easy it may be seen that I intend	
	No detriment need fear; go, and be strong!"		Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee	
410	So saying he dismissed them; they with speed		Man's friend, his Mediator, his designed	60
	Their course through thickest constellations held,		Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,	
	Spreading their bane; the blasted stars looked wan,		And destined Man himself to judge Man fallen."	
	And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse		So spake the Father; and, unfolding bright	
	Then suffered. The other way Satan went down		Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son	
415	The causey to Hell-gate. On either side		Blazed forth unclouded Deity: He full	65
	Disparted Chaos overbuilt exclaimed,		Resplendent all his Father manifest	
	And with rebounding surge the bars assailed,		Expressed, and thus divinely answered mild:	
	That scorned his indignation. Through the gate,		"Father Eternal, thine is to decree;	
	Wide open and unguarded, Satan passed,		Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will	
420	And all about found desolate; for those,		Supreme; that thou in me, thy Son beloved,	70
	Appointed to sit there, had left their charge,		Mayest ever rest well pleased. I go to judge	
S264	Flown to the upper World; the rest were all		On Earth these thy transgressours; but thou knowest,	
	Far to the inland retired, about the walls		Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,	
	Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat		When time shall be; for so I undertook	
425	Of Lucifer, so by allusion called		Before thee; and, not repenting, this obtain	75
L2[O]	Of that bright star to Satan paragoned.		Of right, that I may mitigate their doom	L2[O]
A	There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand		On me derived; yet I shall temper so	A
vv 2/3	In council sat, solicitous what chance		Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most	
	Might intercept their emperor sent; so he		Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.	F259
430	Departing gave command, and they observed.		Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none	80
F270	As when the Tartar from his Russian foe,	3 (2C)	Are to behold the judgement, but the judged,	S254
	By Astracan, over the snowy plains,		Those two; the third best absent is condemned,	
	Retires; or Bactrian Sophi, from the horns		Convict by flight, and rebel to all law;	
	Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond		Conviction to the Serpent none belongs."	
435	The realm of Aladule, in his retreat		Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose	85
	To Tauris or Casbeen: So these, the late		Of high collateral glory: Him Thrones and Powers,	
	Heaven-banished host, left desert utmost Hell		Princedom, and Dominations ministrant,	
	Many a dark league, reduced in careful watch	3	Accompanied to Heaven-gate; from whence	
	Round their metropolis; and now expecting		Eden, and all the coast in prospect lay.	8K
440	Each hour their great adventurer from the search		Down he descended straight; the speed of Gods	90
	Of foreign worlds. He through the midst unmarked,		Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes winged.	
	In show plebeian Angel militant		Now was the sun in western cadence low	
	Of lowest order, passed; and from the door		From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,	
	Of that Plutonian hall invisible		To fan the earth now waked, and usher in	
445	Ascended his high throne; which, under state		The evening cool; when he, from wrath more cool,	95
	Of richest texture spread, at the upper end		Came the mild Judge, and Intercessour both,	
	Was placed in regal lustre. Down a while		To sentence Man. The voice of God they heard	
	He sat, and round about him saw unseen.		Now walking in the garden, by soft winds	
	At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head		Brought to their ears, while day declined; they heard,	
10.450	And shape star-bright appeared, or brighter, clad	97	And from his presence hid themselves among	10.100

The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God,
Approaching, thus to Adam called aloud:
“Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet
♦ My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,
105 Not pleased, thus entertained with solitude,
Where obvious duty erewhile appeared unsought,
Or come I less conspicuously? or what change
Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth!”
He came; and with him Eve, more loth, though first
110 To offend; discountenanced both, and discomposed.
F260 Love was not in their looks, either to God,
Or to each other; but apparent guilt,
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.
115 Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answered brief:
“I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice
S255 Afraid, being naked, hid myself.” To whom
The gracious Judge without revile replied:
“My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not feared,
120 But still rejoiced; how is it now become
So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked who
Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?”
To whom thus Adam sore beset replied:
125 “O Heaven! in evil strait this day I stand
L2[I] Before my Judge; either to undergo
A Myself the total crime, or to accuse
My other self, the partner of my life,
Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,
130 I should conceal, and not expose to blame
By my complaint. But strict necessity
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,
Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
However insupportable, be all
135 Devolved; though should I hold my peace, yet thou
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.
This Woman, whom thou madest to be my help,
And gavest me as thy perfect gift, so good,
So fit, so acceptable, so divine,
140 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
And what she did, whatever in itself,
Her doing seemed to justify the deed —
F261 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.”
To whom the Sovran Presence thus replied:
145 “Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey
Milton Before his voice? or was she made thy guide,
Paradise Superior, or but equal, that to her
Lost Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place
Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,
10.150 And for thee, whose perfection far excelled

94 (70c)

4 (3C)

4

98

Of that stupendious bridge his joy increased.
Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
Milton Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke: Paradise
“O Parent, these are thy magnifick deeds, Lost
Thy trophies! which thou viewest as not thine own; S262
Thou art their author and prime architect:
For I no sooner in my heart divined,
My heart, which by a secret harmony
Still moves with thine, joined in connexion sweet,
That thou on Earth hadst prospered, which thy looks 360
Now also evidence, but straight I felt,
Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt,
That I must after thee, with this thy son;
Such fatal consequence unites us three!
Hell could no longer hold us in our bounds, 365
Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure
Detain from following thy illustrious track. F268
Thou hast achieved our liberty, confined
Within Hell-gates till now; thou us impowered
To fortify thus far, and overlay, 370
With this portentous bridge, the dark Abyss.
Thine now is all this World; thy virtue hath won
What thy hands builded not; thy wisdom gained
With odds what war hath lost, and fully avenged
Our foil in Heaven; here thou shalt monarch reign, 375
There didst not. There let him still victor sway, L2[I]
As battle hath adjudged; from this new World A
Retiring, by his own doom alienated;
And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds, 380
His quadrature, from thy orbicular World;
Or try thee now more dangerous to his throne.”
Whom thus the Prince of darkness answered glad:
“Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,
High proof ye now have given to be the race 385
Of Satan (for I glory in the name,
Antagonist of Heaven’s Almighty King)
AmPLY have merited of me, of all S263
The infernal empire, that so near Heaven’s door
Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390
Mine, with this glorious work, and made one realm,
Hell and this World, one realm, one continent
Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore while I
Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,
To my associate Powers, them to acquaint 395
With these successes, and with them rejoice,
You two this way, among these numerous orbs,
All yours, right down to Paradise descend;
There dwell and reign in bliss; thence on the earth F269
Dominion exercise and in the air, 10.400

Milton	Over the foaming deep high-arched, a bridge	95 (71c)	Hers in all real dignity? Adorned	S256
Paradise	Of length prodigious, joining to the wall		She was indeed, and lovely, to attract	Milton
F266	Immovable of this now fenceless World,		Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts	Paradise
Lost ♦	Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,		Were such, as under government well seemed;	Lost
305	Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to Hell.		Unseemly to bear rule; which was thy part	155
	So, if great things to small may be compared,		And person, hadst thou known thyself aright."	
	Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,		So having said, he thus to Eve in few:	
	From Susa, his Memnonian palace high,		"Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done?"	
	Came to the sea, and, over Hellespont		To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelmed,	
310	Bridging his way, Europe with Asia joined;		Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge	160
	And scourged with many a stroke the indignant waves.		Bold or loquacious, thus abashed replied:	
	Now had they brought the work by wonderous art		"The Serpent me beguiled, and I did eat."	
	Pontifical, a ridge of pendant rock,		Which when the Lord God heard, without delay	
	Over the vexed abyss, following the track		To judgement he proceeded on the accused	
315	Of Satan to the self-same place where he		Serpent, though brute; unable to transfer	165
	First lighted from his wing, and landed safe		The guilt on him, who made him instrument	
	From out of Chaos, to the outside bare		Of mischief, and polluted from the end	
	Of this round World: with pins of adamant		Of his creation; justly then accursed,	
	And chains they made all fast, too fast they made		As vitiated in nature. More to know	
320	And durable! And now in little space		Concerned not Man (since he no further knew)	170
S261	The confines met of empyrean Heaven,		Nor altered his offence. Yet God at last	
	And of this World; and, on the left hand, Hell		To Satan first in sin, his doom applied,	
	With long reach interposed; three several ways		Though in mysterious terms, judged as then best;	
	In sight, to each of these three places led.		And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall:	
325	And now their way to Earth they had descried,		"Because thou hast done this, thou art accursed	F262
L3[O]	To Paradise first tending; when, behold!		Above all cattle, each beast of the field;	L3[O]
A	Satan, in likeness of an Angel bright,		Upon thy belly groveling thou shalt go,	A
	Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering		And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.	
	His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose!		Between thee and the Woman I will put	
330	Disguised he came; but those his children dear		Enmity, and between thine and her seed;	180
	Their parent soon discerned, though in disguise.		Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel."	
	He, after Eve seduced, unminded slunk	5 (4c)	So spake this oracle, then verified	
	Into the wood fast by; and, changing shape,		When Jesus, Son of Mary, second Eve,	
	To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act		Saw Satan fall, like lightning , down from Heaven,	
F267	By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded		Prince of the air; then, rising from his grave	S257
	Upon her husband; saw their shame that sought		Spoiled Principalities and Powers, triumphed	
	Vain covertures; but when he saw descend		In open show, and, with ascension bright,	
	The Son of God to judge them, terrified		Captivity led captive through the air,	
	He fled; not hoping to escape, but shun	5	The realm itself of Satan, long usurped;	
340	The present; fearing, guilty, what his wrath		Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;	190
	Might suddenly inflict. That past, returned		Even he, who now foretold his fatal bruise;	
	By night, and, listening where the hapless pair		And to the Woman thus his sentence turned:	
	Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,		"Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply	
	Thence gathered his own doom, which understood		By thy conception; children thou shalt bring	
345	Not instant, but of future time, with joy		In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will	195
	And tidings fraught, to Hell he now returned;		Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule."	
	And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot		On Adam last thus judgement he pronounced:	
	Of this new wonderous pontifice, unhop'd		"Because thou hast hearkened to the voice of thy wife,	
	Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.		And eaten of the tree, concerning which	
10.350	Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight	99	I charged thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat thereof,	10.200

	Cursed is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow Shalt eat thereof, all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth	96 (72c)	For Death from Sin no power can separate. But, lest the difficulty of passing back Stay his return perhaps over this gulf	\$259
♦	Unbid; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;		Impassable, impervious; let us try —	
205	In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, Till thou return unto the ground; for thou		Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine	255
F263	Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth, For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.”		Not unagreeable — to found a path Over this main from Hell to that new world, Where Satan now prevails; a monument Of merit high to all the infernal host, Easing their passage hence, for intercourse,	260
210	So judged he Man, both Judge and Savior sent; And the instant stroke of death, denounced that day, Removed far off; then, pitying how they stood Before him naked to the air, that now Must suffer change, disdained not to begin Thenceforth the form of servant to assume;		Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn By this new-felt attraction and instinct.”	
215	As when he washed his servants’ feet ; so now, As father of his family, he clad Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain, Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid;		Whom thus the meager Shadow answered soon: “Go, whither Fate, and inclination strong,	265
\$258	And thought not much to clothe his enemies.		Leads thee; I shall not lag behind, nor err The way, thou leading; such a scent I draw Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste The savour of death from all things there that live.	
220	Nor he their outward only with the skins Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more. Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness, Arraying, covered from his Father’s sight. To him with swift ascent he up returned,		Nor shall I to the work thou enterpriset	270
225	Into his blissful bosom reassumed		Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.”	F265
L3[I]	In glory, as of old; to him appeased		So saying, with delight he snuffed the smell Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote, Against the day of battle, to a field, Where armies lie encamped, come flying, lured With scent of living carcasses designed For death, the following day, in bloody fight:	275 L3[I]
A	All, though all-knowing, what had passed with Man Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.		So scented the grim Feature, and upturned His nostril wide into the murky air,	A
230	Meanwhile, ere thus was sinned and judged on Earth, Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death, In counterview within the gates, that now Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame Far into Chaos, since the Fiend passed through, Sin opening; who thus now to Death began:	6 (5C)	Sagacious of his quarry from so far. Then both from out Hell-gates, into the waste Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark, Flew diverse; and with power (their power was great) Hovering upon the waters, what they met	280 285
235	“O Son, why sit we here each other viewing Idly, while Satan, our great author , thrives In other worlds, and happier seat provides For us, his offspring dear? It cannot be		Solid or slimy, as in raging sea Tost up and down, together crowded drove,	\$260
F264	But that success attends him; if mishap,	6	From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell; As when two polar winds, blowing adverse Upon the Cronian sea, together drive Mountains of ice, that stop the imagined way Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil	290
240	Ere this he had returned, with fury driven By his avengers; since no place like this Can fit his punishment, or their revenge. Methinks I feel new strength within me rise, Wings growing, and dominion given me large		Death with his mace petrifick, cold and dry, As with a trident , smote, and fixed as firm As Delos , floating once; the rest his look	295 Milton
245	Beyond this deep; whatever draws me on, Or sympathy, or some connatural force,		Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move;	Paradise
Milton	Powerful at greatest distance to unite,		And with Asphaltick slime, broad as the gate,	Lost
Paradise	With secret amity, things of like kind, By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade		Deep to the roots of Hell the gathered beach They fastened, and the mole immense wrought on	10.300
Lost	Inseparable, must with me along;	100		

With adverse blast upturns them from the south
Milton Notus and Afer, black with thunderous clouds
Paradise From Serrationa; thwart of these, as fierce,
Lost ♦ Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,
 705 Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral noise,
 Sirocco and Libeccio. Thus began
 Outrage from lifeless things; but Discord first,
 Daughter of Sin, among the irrational
 Death introduced, through fierce antipathy.
 710 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,
 And fish with fish; to graze the herb all leaving,
 Devoured each other; nor stood much in awe
 Of Man, but fled him, or with countenance grim,
 Glared on him passing. These were from without
 715 The growing miseries, which Adam saw
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,
 To sorrow abandoned, but worse felt within,
 And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,
F279 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint:
 720 "O miserable of happy! Is this the end
 Of this new glorious World? and me so late
 The glory of that glory? who now, become
 Accursed of blessed, hide me from the face
 Of God, whom to behold was then my highth
 ^^4K Of happiness. Yet well, if here would end
L1[O] The misery; I deserved it, and would bear
B My own deservings. But this will not serve;
S273 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 Is propagated curse. O voice, once heard
 730 Delightfully, Encrease and multiply,
 Now death to hear! for what can I encrease,
 Or multiply, but curses on my head?
 Who of all ages to succeed, but, feeling
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse
 735 My head? Ill fare our ancestor impure,
 For this we may thank Adam! but his thanks
 Shall be the execration. So, besides
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from me
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound;
 740 On me, as on their natural center, light
 Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woe!
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay
 To mould me Man? did I solicit thee
 745 From darkness to promote me, or here place
 In this delicious garden? As my will
 Concurred not to my being, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust;
 Desirous to resign and render back
10.750 All I received, unable to perform

97 (73c)

7 (6c)

7

101

Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
 Used by the Tempter. On that prospect strange
Milton Their earnest eyes they fixed, imagining
Paradise For one forbidden tree a multitude
Lost Now risen, to work them further woe or shame;
 555 Yet, parched with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain;
 But on they rolled in heaps, and, up the trees
S268 Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks
F274 That curled Megaera. Greedily they plucked
 560 The fruitage fair to sight, **like that which grew**
Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flamed;
 This more delusive, not the touch, but taste
 Deceived. They, fondly thinking to allay
 Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit
 565 Chewed bitter ashes, which the offended taste
 With spattering noise rejected. Oft they assayed,
 Hunger and thirst constraining; drugged as oft,
 With hatefulest disrelish, writhed their jaws,
 With soot and cinders filled; so oft they fell
 570 Into the same illusion, not as Man
 Whom they triumphed once lapsed. Thus were they plagued
 And worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,
 Till their lost shape, permitted, they resumed;
 Yearly enjoined, some say, to undergo,
 575 This annual humbling certain numbered days,
L1[O] To dash their pride, and joy, for Man seduced.
B However, some tradition they dispersed
 Among the Heathen, of their purchase got,
 And fabled how the Serpent, whom they called
 580 Ophion, with Eurynome — the wide
 Encroaching Eve perhaps — had first the rule
 Of high Olympus; thence by Saturn driven
 And Ops, ere yet Dictaeon Jove was born.
 Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair
 585 Too soon arrived; Sin, there in power before,
 Once actual; now in body, and to dwell
 Habitual habitant; behind her Death,
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
 On his pale horse: to whom Sin thus began:
 590 "Second of Satan sprung, all-conquering Death!
F275 What thinkest thou of our empire now, though earned
S269 With travel difficult? Not better far
 Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have sat watch,
 Unnamed, undreaded, and thyself half starved?"
 595 Whom thus the Sin-born monster answered soon:
 "To me, who with eternal famine pine,
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven;
 There best, where most with ravine I may meet;
 Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems **10.600**

To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corpse.”
 To whom the incestuous mother thus replied:
 “Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers,
 ♦ Feed first; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl;
 605 No homely morsels! and, whatever thing
 The scythe of Time mows down, devour unspared;
 Till I, in Man residing, through the race,
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect,
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.”
 610 This said, they both betook them several ways,
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
 Sooner or later; which the Almighty seeing,
 From his transcendent seat the Saints among,
 615 To those bright Orders uttered thus his voice:
 “See, with what heat these dogs of Hell advance
 To waste and havock yonder world, which I
 So fair and good created; and had still
 Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man
 620 Let in these wasteful furies, who impute
 Folly to me; so doth the Prince of Hell
 And his adherents, that with so much ease
 F276 I suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heavenly, and conniving seem
 625 To gratify my scornful enemies,
 L1[I] S270 That laugh, as if, transported with some fit
 B Of passion, I to them had quitted all,
 At random yielded up to their misrule;
 And know not that I called, and drew them thither,
 630 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth
 Which Man’s polluting sin with taint hath shed
 On what was pure; till, crammed and gorged, nigh burst
 With sucked and glutted offal, at one sling
 Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,
 635 Both Sin and Death, and yawning Grave at last,
 Through Chaos hurled, obstruct the mouth of Hell
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.
 Then Heaven and Earth renewed shall be made pure
 To sanctity that shall receive no stain.
 640 Till then the curse pronounced on both precedes.”
 He ended, and the heavenly audience loud
 Sung Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,
 Through multitude that sung: “Just are thy ways,
 Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works;
 645 Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,
 Milton Destined Restorer of mankind, by whom
 Paradise New Heaven and Earth shall to the ages rise,
 Lost Or down from Heaven descend.” Such was their song;
 While the Creator, calling forth by name
 10.650 His mighty Angels, gave them several charge,

98 (74C)

8 (7C)

8

102

As sorted best with present things. The sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine, Milton
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat Paradise
 Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call Lost
 Decrepit winter; from the south to bring ^2K F277
 Solstitial summer’s heat; to the blanc moon
 Her office they prescribed; to the other five
 Their planetary motions and aspects,
 In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite,
 Of noxious efficacy, and when to join S271 660
 In synod unbenign; and taught the fixed
 Their influence malignant when to shower,
 Which of them rising with the sun or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous: to the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound 665
 Sea, air, and shore; the thunder when to roll
 With terror through the dark aerial hall.
 Some say, he bid his Angels turn askanse
 The poles of earth, twice ten degrees and more,
 From the sun’s axle; they with labour pushed 670
 Oblique the centrick globe: some say, the sun
 Was bid turn reins from the equinoctial road
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven
 Atlantick Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,
 Up to the Tropick Crab: thence down amain 675
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales, L1[I]
 As deep as Capricorn; to bring in change B
 Of seasons to each clime. Else had the spring
 Perpetual smiled on earth with vernant flowers,
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun,
 To recompense his distance, in their sight
 Had rounded still the horizon, and not known
 Or east or west; which had forbid the snow 685
 From cold Estotiland, and south as far
 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit F278
 The sun, as from Thyestean banquet, turned
 His course intended; else how had the world
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now, 690
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?
 These changes in the Heavens, though slow, produced
 Like change on sea and land; sidereal blast,
 Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot, S272
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north 695
 Of Norumbega, and the Samoed shore,
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, armed with ice,
 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust and flaw,
 Boreas, and Caecias, and Argestes loud,
 And Thrascias, rend the woods, and seas upturn; 10.700

S283 Humbly, their faults and pardon begged, with tears
Milton Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air
Paradise Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
10.1104 ♦ Of sorrow unfeigned, and humiliation meek.
11.1 **T**HUS they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood
Lost Praying; for from the mercy-seat above
Prevenient grace descending had removed
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
5 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breathed
S286 Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer
Inspired, and winged for Heaven with speedier flight
Than loudest oratory. Yet their port
Not of mean suitors, nor important less
10 Seemed their petition than when the ancient pair
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore
The race of mankind drowned, before the shrine
Of Themis stood devout. To Heaven their prayers
F293 Flew up, nor missed the way, by envious winds
Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they passed
Dimensionless through heavenly doors; then, clad
With incense, where the golden altar fumed,
By their great Intercessor, came in sight
20 Before the Father's throne. Them the glad Son
Presenting thus to intercede began:
L1[O] "See, Father, what first-fruits on Earth are sprung
C From thy implanted grace in Man; these sighs
And prayers, which in this golden censor, mixed
25 With incense, I thy priest, before thee bring;
Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees
Of Paradise could have produced, ere fallen
30 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear
To supplication; hear his sighs, though mute;
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
Interpret for him, me his advocate
And propitiation; all his works on me,
35 Good or not good, ingraft; my merit those
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
Accept me, and in me from these receive
The smell of peace toward Mankind: let him live
Before thee reconciled, at least his days
40 S287 Numbered, though sad; till death, his doom (which I
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse),
To better life shall yield him, where with me
All my redeemed may dwell in joy and bliss,
Made one with me, as I with thee am one."
To whom the Father, without cloud, serene:
11.46 "All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
Obtain; all thy request was my decree.

99 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added
Paradise The sense of endless woes? Inexplicable
Lost Thy justice seems. Yet, to say truth, too late
755 I thus contest; then should have been refused
Those terms whatever, when they were proposed.
Thou didst accept them: wilt thou enjoy the good,
Then cavil the condition? And, though God
760 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son
Prove disobedient, and reproved retort:
Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not!
S274 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,
765 But natural necessity, begot.
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
To serve him; thy reward was of his grace,
Thy punishment then justly is at his will.
Be it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,
770 That dust I am, and shall to dust return.
O welcome hour whenever! Why delays
His hand to execute what his decree
Fixed on this day? Why do I overlive?
Why am I mocked with death, and lengthened out
775 To deathless pain? How gladly would I meet
Mortality my sentence, and be earth
L1[O] Insensible! How glad would lay me down
C
As in my mother's lap! There I should rest,
And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more
780 Would thunder in my ears; no fear of worse
To me, and to my offspring, would torment me
9 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die;
F281 Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of Man
785 Which God inspired, cannot together perish
With this corporeal clod. Then, in the grave,
Or in some other dismal place, who knows
But I shall die a living death? O thought
Horrid, if true! Yet why? It was but breath
790 Of life that sinned. What dies but what had life
And sin? The body properly had neither.
All of me then shall die. Let this appease
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.
For though the Lord of all be infinite,
795 Is his wrath also? Be it, Man is not so,
But mortal doomed. How can he exercise
S275 Wrath without end on Man, whom death must end?
Can he make deathless death? That were to make
Strange contradiction, which to God himself
10.800 Impossible is held; as argument

	Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out, For anger's sake, finite to infinite, In punished Man, to satisfy his rigor, Satisfied never? That were to extend	100 (75C)	Pains only in child-bearing were foretold, And bringing forth; soon recompensed with joy, Fruit of thy womb; on me the curse aslope Glanced on the ground. With labour I must earn My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse.	1055
♦ 805	His sentence beyond dust and Nature's law, By which all causes else, according still To the reception of their matter, act. Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say		My labour will sustain me; and, lest cold Or heat should injure us, his timely care Hath, unbesought provided, and his hands Clothed us unworthy, pitying while he judged.	
810	That death be not one stroke, as I supposed, Bereaving sense, but endless misery From this day onward, which I feel begun Both in me, and without me, and so last To perpetuity — Ay me! that fear Comes thundering back with dreadful revolution		How much more, if we pray him, will his ear Be open, and his heart to pity incline, And teach us further by what means to shun The inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow! Which now the sky, with various face, begins To show us in this mountain, while the winds Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks	1060 1065
F282	On my defenceless head. Both Death and I Am found eternal, and incorporate both; Nor I on my part single; in me all Posterity stands cursed. Fair patrimony That I must leave ye, Sons! O, were I able		Of these fair spreading trees; which bids us seek Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish Our limbs benumbed, ere this diurnal star Leave cold the night, how we his gathered beams Reflected may with matter sere foment; Or by collision of two bodies grind The air attrite to fire; as late the clouds Justling, or pushed with winds, rude in their shock, Tine the slant lightning; whose thwart flame, driven down Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine; And sends a comfortable heat from far, Which might supply the sun: such fire to use, And what may else be remedy or cure	\$283 F290 1070 1075
820	To waste it all myself, and leave ye none! So disinherited, how would ye bless Me, now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemned? It guiltless; but from me what can proceed,			L1[I] C
825	But all corrupt; both mind and will depraved Not to do only, but to will the same With me? How can they then acquitted stand In sight of God? Him, after all disputes, Forced I absolve: all my evasions vain,			
L1[I] C				
830	\$276 And reasonings, though through mazes , lead me still But to my own conviction: first and last On me, me only, as the source and spring Of all corruption, all the blame lights due; So might the wrath! Fond wish! couldst thou support	10 (8C)	To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, He will instruct us praying, and of grace Beseeching him; so as we need not fear To pass commodiously this life, sustained By him with many comforts, till we end In dust, our final rest and native home.	1080 1085
835	That burden, heavier than the Earth to bear; Than all the World much heavier, though divided With that bad Woman? Thus, what thou desirest, And what thou fearest, alike destroys all hope Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable	10	What better can we do, than to the place Repairing where he judged us, prostrate fall Before him reverent, and there confess Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign Of sorrow unfeigned, and humiliation meek? Undoubtedly he will relent, and turn From his displeasure, in whose look, serene, When angry most he seemed and most severe, What else but favor, grace, and mercy shone?"	1090 1095
840	Beyond all past example and future; To Satan only like, both crime and doom. O Conscience, into what abyss of fears And horrors hast thou driven me! out of which I find no way, from deep to deeper plunged."		So spake our father penitent, nor Eve Felt less remorse. They forthwith, to the place Repairing where he judged them, prostrate fell Before him, reverent, and both confessed	1100
845	Thus Adam to himself lamented loud, Through the still night; not now, as ere Man fell, Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air Accompanied; with damps and dreadful gloom; Which to his evil conscience represented			Milton Paradise Lost F291
Milton F283 Paradise Lost 10.850	All things with double terror. On the ground	104		

	Let us seek Death; or, he not found, supply	101 (76C)	Outstretched he lay, on the cold ground, and oft	
Milton	With our own hands his office on ourselves:		Cursed his creation, Death as oft accused	Milton
Paradise	Why stand we longer shivering under fears,		Of tardy execution, since denounced	Paradise
Lost ♦	That show no end but death, and have the power,		The day of his offence. "Why comes not Death,"	Lost
1005	Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,		Said he, "with one thrice acceptable stroke	855
F288	Destruction with destruction to destroy?"		To end me? shall Truth fail to keep her word?	
	She ended here, or vehement despair		Justice Divine not hasten to be just?	
	Broke off the rest; so much of death her thoughts		But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine	
	Had entertained as dyed her cheeks with pale.		Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.	
1010	But Adam, with such counsel nothing swayed,		O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers!	860
	To better hopes his more attentive mind		With other echo late I taught your shades	
	Labouring had raised, and thus to Eve replied:		To answer, and resound far other song." —	
	"Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems		Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,	
	To argue in thee something more sublime		Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,	S277
1015	And excellent than what thy mind contemns;		Soft words to his fierce passion she assayed;	865
	But self-destruction therefore sought refutes		But her with stern regard he thus repelled:	
	That excellence thought in thee, and implies		"Out of my sight, thou Serpent! That name best	
	Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret		Befits thee with him leagued, thyself as false	
	For loss of life and pleasure overloved.		And hateful. Nothing wants, but that thy shape,	
1020	Or if thou covet death, as utmost end		Like his, and color serpentine, may show	870
	Of misery, so thinking to evade		Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee	
	The penalty pronounced, doubt not but God		Henceforth; lest that too heavenly form, pretended	
	Hath wiselier armed his vengeful ire than so		To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee	
	To be forestalled; much more I fear lest death,		I had persisted happy; had not thy pride	
1025	So snatched, will not exempt us from the pain		And wandering vanity, when least was safe,	875
L2[O]	We are by doom to pay; rather such acts		Rejected my forewarning, and disdained	L2[O]
C	Of contumacy will provoke the Highest		Not to be trusted; longing to be seen,	C
	To make death in us live. Then let us seek		Though by the Devil himself; him overweening	
	Some safer resolution, which methinks		To over-reach; but, with the serpent meeting,	F284
1030	I have in view, calling to mind with heed		Fooled and beguiled; by him thou, I by thee	880
	Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise		To trust thee from my side; imagined wise,	
	The Serpent's head; piteous amends! unless	11 (9C)	Constant, mature, proof against all assaults;	
S282	Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe,		And understood not all was but a show,	
	Satan; who, in the serpent, hath contrived		Rather than solid virtue; all but a rib	
1035	Against us this deceit. To crush his head		Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,	885
	Would be revenge indeed! which will be lost		More to the part sinister, from me drawn;	
F289	By death brought on ourselves, or childless days		Well if thrown out, as supernumerary	
	Resolved, as thou proposest; so our foe		To my just number found. O why did God,	
	Shall 'scape his punishment ordained, and we	11	Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven	
1040	Instead shall double ours upon our heads.		With Spirits masculine, create at last	890
	No more be mentioned then of violence		This novelty on earth, this fair defect	
	Against ourselves; and wilful barrenness,		Of Nature, and not fill the world at once	
	That cuts us off from hope, and savours only		With Men as Angels, without feminine?	
	Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,		Or find some other way to generate	
1045	Reluctance against God and his just yoke		Mankind? This mischief had not been befallen,	895
	Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild		And more that shall befall; innumerable	
	And gracious temper he both heard and judged,		Disturbances on Earth through female snares,	
	Without wrath or reviling. We expected		And strait conjunction with this sex. For either	S278
	Immediate dissolution, which we thought		He never shall find out fit mate, but such	
10.1050	Was meant by death that day; when lo! to thee	105	As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;	10.900

Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gained
By a far worse; or, if she love, withheld
♦ By parents; or his happiest choice too late
905 Shall meet, already linked and wedlock-bound
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame:
Which infinite calamity shall cause
To human life, and household peace confound.”
He added not, and from her turned; but Eve,
910 Not so repulsed, with tears that ceased not flowing
F285 And tresses all disordered at his feet
Fell humble; and, embracing them, besought
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint:
“Forsake me not thus, Adam! witness Heaven
915 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
Unhappily deceived! Thy suppliant
I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
920 Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress,
My only strength and stay. Forlorn of thee,
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
Between us two let there be peace; both joining,
925 As joined in injuries, one enmity
L2[I] Against a foe by doom express assigned us,
C That cruel Serpent. On me exercise not
Thy hatred for this misery befallen,
On me already lost, me than thyself
930 More miserable. Both have sinned; but thou
Against God only; I against God and thee;
And to the place of judgement will return,
There with my cries importune Heaven; that all
The sentence, from thy head removed, may light
935 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,
Me, me only, just object of his ire.”
She ended weeping; and her lowly plight,
Immoveable, till peace obtained from fault
Acknowledged and deplored, in Adam wrought
940 Commiseration: Soon his heart relented
Towards her, his life so late, and sole delight,
Now at his feet submissive in distress;
F286 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
His counsel, whom she had displeased, his aid.
945 As one **disarmed**, his anger all he lost,
Milton And thus with peaceful words upraised her soon:
Paradise “Unwary, and too desirous, as before,
Lost So now of what thou knowest not, who desirest
The punishment all on thyself. Alas!
10.950 Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain

102 (77C)

12 (10C)

12

106

His full wrath, whose thou feelest as yet least part,
And my displeasure bearest so ill. If prayers
Could alter high decrees, I to that place
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,
That on my head all might be visited;
955 Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,
To me committed, and by me exposed.
But rise; let us no more contend, nor blame
Each other, blamed enough elsewhere; but strive
In offices of love, how we may lighten
960 Each other's burden, in our share of woe;
Since this day's death denounced, if aught I see,
Will prove no sudden, but a slow-paced evil;
A long day's dying, to augment our pain;
And to our seed (O hapless seed!) derived.”
965 To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied:
“Adam, by sad experiment I know
How little weight my words with thee can find,
Found so erroneous; thence by just event
Found so unfortunate. Nevertheless,
970 Restored by thee, vile as I am, to place
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen,
F287 Tending to some relief of our extremes,
L2[I] Or end; though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
C As in our evils, and of easier choice.
If care of our descent perplex us most,
Which must be born to certain woe, devoured
980 By Death at last; and miserable it is
To be to others cause of misery,
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring
Into this cursed world a woeful race,
That after wretched life must be at last
985 Food for so foul a monster; in thy power
It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.
Childless thou art, childless remain: so Death
Shall be deceived his glut, and with us two
990 Be forced to satisfy his ravenous maw.
But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
From love's due rights, nuptial embraces sweet;
And with desire to languish without hope,
995 Before the present object languishing
Milton With like desire, which would be misery
Paradise And torment less than none of what we dread;
Lost Then, both ourselves and seed at once to free
S281 From what we fear for both, let us make short, — 10.1000

♦ Degraded, to what wretched state reserved!
Milton Better end here unborn. Why is life given
Paradise To be thus wrested from us? rather why
Lost Obtruded on us thus? who, if we knew
505 What we receive, would either not accept
Life offered, or soon beg to lay it down,
Glad to be so dismissed in peace. Can thus
The image of God in Man, created once
So goodly and erect, though faulty since,
510 To such unsightly sufferings be debased
Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,
Retaining still divine similitude
In part, from such deformities be free,
And for his Maker's image sake exempt?"

S301 "Their Maker's image," answered Michael, "then
Forsook them, when themselves they vilified
To serve ungoverned Appetite, and took
His image whom they served, a brutish vice,
Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.
520 Therefore so abject is their punishment
Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own;
Or if his likeness, by themselves defaced
While they pervert pure Nature's healthful rules
To loathsome sickness; worthily, since they
525 God's image did not reverence in themselves."
L1[O] "I yield it just," said Adam, "and submit.
A But is there yet no other way besides
These painful passages, how we may come
To death, and mix with our connatural dust?"

530 **F309** "There is," said Michael, "if thou well observe —
The rule of Not too much, by temperance taught
In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
Till many years over thy head return.
535 So may'st thou live, till, **like ripe fruit**, thou drop
Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease
Gathered, not harshly plucked, for death mature.
This is old age. But then thou must outlive
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
540 To withered, weak, and gray; thy senses then,
Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgo
To what thou hast; and, for the air of youth,
Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign
A melancholy damp of cold and dry
545 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume
The balm of life." To whom our Ancestor:
"Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit,
S302 Fairest and easiest, of this cumbrous charge,
11.550 Which I must keep till my appointed day

103

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's
First Edition (in 10 books)
printed by Peter Parker (1667).
The First Edition does not
number pages; line 1.1 is on **F1^**.
- S#^** top row of page # in Milton's
Second Edition (in 12 books)
printed by S. Simmon (1674)
- ♦ same row as last line
of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)
IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 11



**EPIC
.ORG
POEM
DIGITAL CLASSICS**

PREVIEW
Book 12

A 3L 1 - 550
B 1L 551 - 750
C 1L 751 - 901

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 901 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
107 to 116

♦		THUS they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood Praying; for from the mercy-seat above Prevenient grace descending had removed The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breathed Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer Inspired, and winged for Heaven with speedier flight Than loudest oratory. Yet their port Not of mean suitors, nor important less Seemed their petition than when the ancient pair In fables old, less ancient yet than these, Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore The race of mankind drowned, before the shrine Of Themis stood devout. To Heaven their prayers Flew up, nor missed the way, by envious winds Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they passed Dimensionless through heavenly doors; then, clad With incense, where the golden altar fumed, By their great Intercessor, came in sight Before the Father's throne. Them the glad Son Presenting thus to intercede began: "See, Father, what first-fruits on Earth are sprung From thy implanted grace in Man; these sighs And prayers, which in this golden censor, mixed With incense, I thy priest, before thee bring; Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed Sown with contrition in his heart, than those Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees Of Paradise could have produced, ere fallen From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear To supplication; hear his sighs, though mute; Unskilful with what words to pray, let me Interpret for him, me his advocate And propitiation; all his works on me, Good or not good, ingraft; my merit those Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay. Accept me, and in me from these receive The smell of peace toward Mankind: let him live Before thee reconciled, at least his days Numbered, though sad; till death, his doom (which I To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse), To better life shall yield him, where with me All my redeemed may dwell in joy and bliss, Made one with me, as I with thee am one." To whom the Father, without cloud, serene: "All thy request for Man, accepted Son, Obtain; all thy request was my decree. But longer in that Paradise to dwell The law I gave to Nature him forbids; Those pure immortal elements, that know	104 (78C)	To that meek man, who well had sacrificed. Is piety thus and pure devotion paid?" To whom Michael thus, he also moved, replied: "These two are brethren, Adam, and to come Out of thy loins. The unjust the just hath slain, For envy that his brother's offering found From Heaven acceptance; but the bloody fact Will be avenged, and the other's faith approved Lose no reward, though here thou see him die, Rolling in dust and gore." To which our Sire: "Alas, both for the deed and for the cause! But have I now seen Death? Is this the way I must return to native dust? O sight Of terror, foul and ugly to behold! Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!" To whom thus Michael: "Death thou hast seen In his first shape on Man; but many shapes Of Death, and many are the ways that lead To his grim cave, all dismal; yet to sense More terrible at the entrance than within. Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die By fire, flood, famine; by intemperance more In meats and drinks, which on the Earth shall bring Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew Before thee shall appear, that thou may'st know What misery the inabstinence of Eve Shall bring on men." Immediately a place Before his eyes appeared, sad, noisome, dark; A lazarus-house it seemed, wherein were laid Numbers of all diseased, all maladies Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds, Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs, Intestine stone and ulcer, colic pangs, Demoniac phrenzy, moping melancholy, And moonstruck madness, pining atrophy, Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence, Dropsies and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums. Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch; And over them triumphant Death his dart Shook, but delayed to strike, though oft invoked With vows, as their chief good and final hope. Sight so deform what heart of rock could long Dry-eyed behold? Adam could not, but wept, Though not of woman born: compassion quelled His best of man, and gave him up to tears A space, till firmer thoughts restrained excess, And, scarce recovering words, his plaint renewed: "O miserable Mankind, to what fall	
5	S286			455	
10				460	
F293				vv 3/4 F307	
20				465	
25	L1[I]			470	
A				475	
30				480	
35			2 (1C)	S300	
40	S287		2	485	
45	Milton			490	
F294				495	
Paradise				Milton Paradise F308 Lost	
Lost				11.500	
11.50			108		

♦	Of Congo, and Angola farthest south;	105 (79C)	No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,	
Milton	Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount,		Eject him, tainted now, and purge him off,	Milton
Paradise	The kingdoms of Almansor, Fez and Sus,		As a distemper, gross, to air as gross,	Paradise
Lost	Marocco and Algiers, and Tremisen;		And mortal food, as may dispose him best	Lost
405	On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway		For dissolution wrought by sin, that first	55
	The world. In spirit perhaps he also saw		Distempered all things, and of incorrupt	
	Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezume,		Corrupted. I, at first, with two fair gifts	
	And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat		Created him endowed, with happiness	
	Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoiled		And immortality; that fondly lost,	
410	Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons		This other served but to eternize woe,	60
	Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights		Till I provided death: so death becomes	
	Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed		His final remedy, and, after life	
	Which that false fruit that promised clearer sight		Tried in sharp tribulation and refined	
S298	Had bred; then purged with euphrasy and rue		By faith and faithful works, to second life,	
415	The visual nerve, for he had much to see,		Waked in the renovation of the just,	65
	And from the well of life three drops instilled.		Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renewed.	
	So deep the power of these ingredients pierced,		But let us call to Synod all the Blest	
	Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,		Through Heaven's wide bounds; from them I will not hide	
	That Adam, now enforced to close his eyes,		My judgments, how with Mankind I proceed,	
420	Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranced;		As how with peccant Angels late they saw,	70
	But him the gentle Angel by the hand		And in their state, though firm, stood more confirmed."	
	Soon raised, and his attention thus recalled:		He ended, and the Son gave signal high	
	"Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold		To the bright minister that watched. He blew	
	The effects which thy original crime hath wrought		His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps	S288
425	In some to spring from thee, who never touched		When God descended, and perhaps once more	75
L2[O]	The excepted tree, nor with the Snake conspired,		To sound at general doom. The angelic blast	L2[O]
A	Nor sinned thy sin, yet from that sin derive		Filled all the regions: from their blissful bowers	A
	Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds."		Of amarantine shade, fountain or spring,	F295
	His eyes he opened, and beheld a field,		By the waters of life, where'er they sat	80
430	Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves		In fellowships of joy, the Sons of Light	
F306	New-reaped, the other part sheep-walks and folds;	3 (2C)	Hasted, resorting to the summons high,	
	I' the midst an altar as the landmark stood,		And took their seats, till from his throne supreme	
	Rustic, of grassy sord. Thither anon		The Almighty thus pronounced his sovran will:	
	A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought		"O Sons, like one of us Man is become	
435	First-fruits, the green ear and the yellow sheaf,		To know both good and evil, since his taste	85
	Unculled, as came to hand; a shepherd next,		Of that defended fruit; but let him boast	
	More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,		His knowledge of good lost and evil got,	
	Choicest and best; then sacrificing laid	3	Happier had it sufficed him to have known	
	The inwards and their fat, with incense strewed,		Good by itself, and evil not at all.	
440	On the cleft wood, and all due rites performed.		He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,	90
	His offering soon propitious fire from heaven		My motions in him; longer than they move,	
	Consumed with nimble glance and grateful steam;		His heart I know how variable and vain,	
	The other's not, for his was not sincere:		Self-left. Lest, therefore, his now bolder hand	
	Whereat he inly raged, and as they talked,		Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,	
445	Smote him into the midriff with a stone		And live for ever, dream at least to live	95
	That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale,		For ever, to remove him I decree,	
	Groaned out his soul with gushing blood effused.		And send him from the garden forth, to till	
S299	Much at that sight was Adam in his heart		The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.	
	Dismayed, and thus in haste to the Angel cried:		"Michael, this my behest have thou in charge.	
11.450	"O Teacher, some great mischief hath befallen	109	Take to thee from among the Cherubim	11.100

♦	Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend, Or in behalf of Man, or to invade Vacant possession, some new trouble raise. Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God	106 (80C)	Present, and of his presence many a sign, Still following thee, still compassing thee round With goodness and paternal love, his face Express, and of his steps the track divine.	
105	Without remorse drive out the sinful pair, From hallowed ground the unholy, and denounce To them, and to their progeny, from thence		Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirmed Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent To show thee what shall come in future days To thee and to thy offspring. Good with bad	355
S289	Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint At the sad sentence rigorously urged		Expect to hear, supernal grace contending With sinfulness of men; thereby to learn	360
110	(For I behold them softened, and with tears F296 Bewailing their excess) all terror hide. If patiently thy bidding they obey, Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveal To Adam what shall come in future days,		True patience, and to temper joy with fear And pious sorrow, equally inured By moderation either state to bear, Prosperous or adverse: so shalt thou lead Safest thy life; and best prepared endure	365
115	As I shall thee enlighten; intermix My covenant in the Woman's seed renewed. So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace; And on the east side of the garden place, Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,		Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend This hill; let Eve (for I have drenched her eyes) Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st, As once thou slept'st, while she to life was formed."	F304
120	Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame Wide-waving, all approach far off to fright, And guard all passage to the Tree of Life; Lest Paradise a receptacle prove To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,		To whom thus Adam gratefully replied: "Ascend; I follow thee, safe guide, the path Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heaven submit. However chastening; to the evil turn My obvious breast, arming to overcome By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,	370
125	With whose stolen fruit Man once more to delude."		If so I may attain." So both ascend	375
L2[I]	He ceased, and the archangelic Power prepared		In the visions of God. It was a hill,	L2[I]
A	For swift descent; with him the cohort bright Of watchful Cherubim. Four faces each Had, like a double Janus; all their shape		Of Paradise the highest, from whose top The hemisphere of Earth, in clearest ken, Stretched out to the amplest reach of prospect lay.	A
130	Spangled with eyes more numerous than those Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse, Charmed with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile, To resalute the world with sacred light,	4 (3C)	Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round, Whereon for different cause the Tempter set Our second Adam, in the wilderness, To show him all Earth's kingdoms and their glory.	S297 380
135	Leucothea waked, and with fresh dewes embalmed The Earth; when Adam and first matron Eve Had ended now their orisons, and found Strength added from above; new hope to spring Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet linked;	4	His eye might there command wherever stood City of old or modern fame, the seat Of mightiest empire, from the destined walls Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can, And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,	385
140	Which thus to Eve his welcome words renewed: "Eve, easily may faith admit that all		To Paquin of Sinaean kings, and thence To Agra and Lahor of Great Mogul,	390
S290	The good which we enjoy from Heaven descends.		Down to the golden Chersonese, or where The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since In Hispahan or where the Russian Ksar In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance,	395
F297	But that from us aught should ascend to Heaven So prevalent as to concern the mind		Turchestan-born; nor could his eye not ken The empire of Negus to his utmost port Ercoco, and the less maritime kings, Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,	Milton Paradise Lost F305
145	Of God high-blest, or to incline his will, Hard to belief may seem; yet this will prayer Or one short sigh of human breath, up-borne Even to the seat of God. For since I sought By prayer the offended Deity to appease,		And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm	11.400
11.150	Kneeled and before him humbled all my heart,	110		

Milton ♦ Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,
Paradise Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring;
F302 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
Lost Recess, and only consolation left
305 Familiar to our eyes; all places else
Inhospitable appear, and desolate,
Nor knowing us, nor known. And, if by prayer
Incessant I could hope to change the will
Of him who all things can, I would not cease
310 To weary him with my assiduous cries.
But prayer against his absolute decree
S295 No more avails than breath against the wind,
Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth:
Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
315 This most afflicts me, that departing hence,
As from his face I shall be hid, deprived
His blessed countenance. Here I could frequent
With worship, place by place where he vouchsafed
Presence Divine, and to my sons relate,
320 On this mount he appeared; under this tree
Stood visible; among these pines his voice
I heard; here with him at this fountain talked.
So many grateful altars I would rear
Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone
325 Of lustre from the brook, in memory
L3[O] Or monument to ages, and thereon
A Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flowers.
In yonder nether world where shall I seek
His bright appearances, or footstep trace?
330 For, though I fled him angry, yet, recalled
To life prolonged and promised race, I now
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
Of glory, and far off his steps adore.”
To whom thus Michael with regard benign:
F303 “Adam, thou know’st Heaven his, and all the Earth,
Not this rock only; his omnipresence fills
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,
Fomented by his virtual power and warmed.
All the Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
340 No despicable gift; surmise not then
His presence to these narrow bounds confined
Of Paradise or Eden. This had been
Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread
All generations, and had hither come
345 From all the ends of the Earth, to celebrate
S296 And reverence thee their great progenitor.
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons.
Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain
11.350 God is, as here, and will be found alike

107 (81C)

5 (4C)

5

111

Methought I saw him placable and mild,
Bending his ear; persuasion in me grew
That I was heard with favour; peace returned
Home to my breast, and to my memory
His promise that thy seed shall bruise our Foe;
Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now
Assures me that the bitterness of death
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee!
Eve rightly called, Mother of all Mankind,
Mother of all things living, since by thee
Man is to live, and all things live for Man.”
To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek:
“Ill-worthy I such title should belong
To me transgressor, who, for thee ordained
A help, became thy snare; to me reproach
Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise.
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
That I, who first brought death on all, am graced
The source of life; next favourable thou,
Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsaf’st,
Far other name deserving. But the field
To labour calls us, now with sweat imposed,
Though after sleepless night; for see! the Morn,
All unconcerned with our unrest, begins
Her rosy progress smiling. Let us forth,
F298 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
S291 L3[O] Where’er our day’s work lies, though now enjoined
A Laborious, till day droop. While here we dwell,
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks?
Here let us live, though in fallen state, content.”
So spake, so wished, much-humbled Eve; but Fate
Subscribed not. Nature first gave signs, impressed
On bird, beast, air — air suddenly eclipsed,
After short blush of morn. Nigh in her sight
The bird of Jove, stooped from his aery tour,
Two birds of gayest plume before him drove;
Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,
First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,
Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind;
Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight.
Adam observed, and, with his eye the chase
Pursuing, not unmoved to Eve thus spake:
“O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
Which Heaven by these mute signs in Nature shows,
Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn
Us, haply too secure of our discharge
From penalty because from death released
Some days; how long, and what till then our life,
Who knows? or more than this, that we are dust,
And thither must return, and be no more?

Milton

Paradise

Lost

155

160

165

170

F298

S291 L3[O]

A

180

185

190

195

11.200

♦	Why else this double object in our sight, Of flight pursued in the air and o'er the ground One way the self-same hour? Why in the east Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning-light	108 (82C)	"Adam, Heaven's high behest no preface needs: Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and Death, Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress, Defeated of his seizure many days,	
205	More orient in yon western cloud, that draws O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,		Given thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent,	255
F299	And slow descends, with something Heavenly fraught?" He erred not; for, by this the Heavenly bands Down from a sky of jasper, lighted now		And one bad act with many deeds well done May'st cover. Well may then thy Lord, appeased, Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim; But longer in this Paradise to dwell	
210 S292	In Paradise, and on a hill made halt; A glorious apparition, had not doubt And carnal fear that day dimmed Adam's eye. Not that more glorious, when the Angels met Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw		Permits not: to remove thee I am come,	260
215	The field pavilioned with his guardians bright; Nor that which on the flaming mount appeared In Dothan, covered with a camp of fire, Against the Syrian king, who to surprise One man, assassin-like , had levied war,		And send thee from the garden forth, to till The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil." He added not; for Adam at the news Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood, That all his senses bound; Eve, who unseen	265
220	War unproclaimed. The princely Hierarch In their bright stand there left his Powers to seize Possession of the garden; he alone, To find where Adam sheltered, took his way, Not unperceived of Adam; who to Eve,		Yet all had heard, with audible lament Discovered soon the place of her retire: "O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death! Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? thus leave Thee, native soil? these happy walks and shades,	270
225	While the great visitant approached, thus spake: L3[I] "Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps A Of us will soon determine, or impose New laws to be observed; for I descry, From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,		Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend, Quiet, though sad, the respite of that day That must be mortal to us both. O flowers, That never will in other climate grow, My early visitation, and my last	275
230	One of the Heavenly host, and, by his gait, None of the meanest; some great Potentate Or of the Thrones above, such majesty Invests him coming; yet not terrible, That I should fear, nor sociably mild,	6 (5C)	At even, which I bred up with tender hand	L3[I]
235	As Raphael, that I should much confide; But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend, With reverence I must meet, and thou retire." He ended; and the Archangel soon drew nigh,		From the first opening bud, and gave ye names, Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank	A S294
F300	Not in his shape celestial, but as man	6	Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount? Thee, lastly, nuptial bower, by me adorned	280
240	Clad to meet man. Over his lucid arms A military vest of purple flowed, Livelier than Meliboean, or the grain Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old		With what to sight or smell was sweet, from thee How shall I part, and whither wander down Into a lower world, to this obscure And wild? How shall we breathe in other air Less pure, accustomed to immortal fruits?"	285
S293	In time of truce; Iris had dipt the woof. 245 His starry helm unbuckled showed him prime Milton In manhood where youth ended; by his side, Paradise As in a glistening zodiac , hung the sword, Lost Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear. Adam bowed low; he kingly from his state		Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild: "Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart, Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine. Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes	290
11.250	Inclined not, but his coming thus declared:	112	Thy husband; him to follow thou art bound; Where he abides, think there thy native soil." Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp Recovering, and his scattered spirits returned, To Michael thus his humble words addressed:	295
			"Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or named Of them the highest, for such of shape may seem Prince above princes, gently hast thou told Thy message, which might else in telling wound, And in performing end us. What besides	Milton Paradise Lost 11.300

♦	The only righteous in a world perverse,	109 (83C)	Of rendering up, and patiently attend	^1K
Milton	And therefore hated, therefore so beset		My dissolution." Michael replied:	Milton
Paradise	With foes, for daring single to be just,		"Nor love thy life, nor hate; but what thou livest	Paradise
Lost	And utter odious truth, that God would come		Live well; how long or short, permit to Heaven.	Lost
705	To judge them with his Saints — him the Most High,		And now prepare thee for another sight."	555
	Wrapped in a balmy cloud with winged steeds,		He looked, and saw a spacious plain, whereon	
	Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God		Were tents of various hue. By some were herds	
	High in salvation and the climes of bliss,		Of cattle grazing; others, whence the sound	
	Exempt from death: to show thee what reward		Of instruments that made melodious chime	
710	Awaits the good, the rest what punishment;		Was heard, of harp and organ, and who moved	560
	Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold."		Their stops and chords was seen; his volent touch	
	He looked, and saw the face of things quite changed.		Instinct through all proportions low and high,	
	The brazen throat of war had ceased to roar;		Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue.	F310
	All now was turned to jollity and game,		In other part stood one who, at the forge	
715	To luxury and riot, feast and dance,		Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass	565
	Marrying or prostituting, as befell,		Had melted (whether found where casual fire	
	Rape or adultery, where passing fair		Had wasted woods, on mountain or in vale,	
	Allured them; thence from cups to civil broils.		Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot	
S307	At length a reverend sire among them came,		To some cave's mouth, or whether washed by stream	
720	And of their doings great dislike declared,		From underground) the liquid ore he drained	570
	And testified against their ways: he oft		Into fit moulds prepared; from which he formed	
	Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,		First his own tools; then, what might else be wrought	
F315	Triumphs or festivals, and to them preached		Fusil or graven in metal. After these,	
	Conversion and repentance, as to souls		But on the hither side, a different sort	
725	In prison, under judgments imminent;		From the high neighbouring hills, which was their seat,	575
L1[O]	But all in vain. Which when he saw, he ceased		Down to the plain descended. By their guise	L1[O]
B	Contending, and removed his tents far off.		Just men they seemed, and all their study bent	B
	Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,		To worship God aright, and know his works	
	Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,		Not hid; nor those things last which might preserve	
730	Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and highth,		Freedom and peace to men. They on the plain	580
	Smeared round with pitch, and in the side a door		Long had not walked, when from the tents behold	
	Contrived, and of provisions laid in large	7 (6C)	A bevy of fair women, richly gay	
	For man and beast: when lo! a wonder strange!		In gems and wanton dress; to the harp they sung	S303
	Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,		Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on.	
735	Came sevens and pairs, and entered in, as taught		The men, though grave, eyed them, and let their eyes	585
	Their order; last the sire, and his three sons,		Rove without rein, till, in the amorous net	
	With their four wives; and God made fast the door.		Fast caught, they liked, and each his liking chose.	
	Meanwhile the south-wind rose, and, with black wings		And now of love they treat, till the evening-star,	
	Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove	7	Love's harbinger, appeared; then all in heat	
740	From under heaven; the hills, to their supply,		They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke	590
	Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,		Hymen, then first to marriage rites invoked:	
	Sent up amain; and now the thickened sky		With feast and music all the tents resound.	
	Like a dark ceiling stood: down rushed the rain		Such happy interview, and fair event	
	Impetuous, and continued till the Earth		Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,	
745	No more was seen. The floating vessel swum		And charming symphonies, attached the heart	F311
	Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow		Of Adam, soon inclined to admit delight,	
	Rode tilting o'er the waves; all dwellings else		The bent of Nature; which he thus expressed:	
	Flood overwhelmed, and them with all their pomp		"True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest!	
	Deep under water rolled; sea covered sea,		Much better seems this vision, and more hope	
11.750	Sea without shore: and in their palaces,	113	Of peaceful days portends, than those two past.	11.600

♦	Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse; Here Nature seems fulfilled in all her ends.”	110 (84C)	But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray.	S305
	To whom thus Michael: “Judge not what is best By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,		With cruel tournament the squadrons join; Where cattle pastured late, now scattered lies	
605	Created, as thou art, to nobler end, Holy and pure, conformity divine.		With carcasses and arms the ensanguined field Deserted. Others to a city strong	655
	Those tents thou saw’st so pleasant were the tents Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race Who slew his brother. Studious they appear		Lay siege, encamped, by battery, scale, and mine, Assaulting; others from the wall defend With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire;	
610	Of arts that polish life, inventors rare; Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit Taught them; but they his gifts acknowledged none.		On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.	F313
	Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget; For that fair female troop thou saw’st, that seemed		In other part the sceptred haralds call To council in the city-gates. Anon	660
615	Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay, Yet empty of all good wherein consists		Grey-headed men and grave, with warriors mixed, Assemble, and harangues are heard; but soon In factious opposition, till at last	
S304	Woman’s domestic honour and chief praise; Bred only and completed to the taste Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,		Of middle age one rising, eminent	665
620	To dress, and troll the tongue, and roll the eye;		In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong, Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace, And judgment from above. Him old and young	
^^3K	To these that sober race of men, whose lives Religious titled them the Sons of God, Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame, Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles		Exploded, and had seized with violent hands, Had not a cloud descending snatched him thence,	670
625	Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy (Erelong to swim at large) and laugh; for which		Unseen amid the throng. So violence Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law, Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.	
L1[I]	The world erelong a world of tears must weep.”		Adam was all in tears, and to his guide Lamenting turned full sad: “Oh, what are these?	675
B F312	To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft: “O pity and shame, that they who to live well		Death’s ministers, not men! who thus deal death Inhumanly to men, and multiply	L1[I]
630	Entered so fair should turn aside to tread Paths indirect, or in the midway faint! But still I see the tenor of Man’s woe		Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew His brother; for of whom such massacre Make they but of their brethren, men of men?	680
	Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.”	8 (7C)	But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost?”	
	“From Man’s effeminate slackness it begins,”		To whom thus Michael: “These are the product Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw’st;	
635	Said the Angel, “who should better hold his place By wisdom, and superior gifts received. But now prepare thee for another scene.”		Where good with bad were matched, who of themselves Abhor to join, and, by imprudence mixed, Produce prodigious births of body or mind.	S306
	He looked, and saw wide territory spread Before him, towns, and rural works between,	8	Such were these Giants, men of high renown; For in those days might only shall be admired, And valour and heroic virtue called;	690
640	Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war, Giants of mighty bone and bold emprise.		To overcome in battle, and subdue	F314
	Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed, Single or in array of battle ranged,		Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch. Of human glory, and for glory done	
645	Both horse and foot, nor idly mustering stood.		Of triumph, to be styled great conquerors,	695
Milton	One way a band select from forage drives		Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods —	Milton
Paradise	A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,		Destroyers rightlier called, and plagues of men.	Paradise
Lost	From a fat meadow ground, or fleecy flock, Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain,		Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on Earth, And what most merits fame in silence hid.	Lost
11.650	Their booty; scarce with life the shepherds fly,	114	But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld’st	11.700

11.901 ♦ Both Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.”

12.1 NEW **A** **S one who in his journey bates at moon,**
NEW **Though bent on speed;** so here the Arch-Angel paused
NEW Betwixt the world destroyed and world restored,
NEW If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;
5 NEW Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes:
Milton “Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
Paradise And Man **as from a second stock** proceed.
Lost Much thou hast yet to see; but I perceive
Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine
10 Must needs impair and weary human sense.
Henceforth what is to come I will relate;
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend:
“This second source of Men, while yet but few,
And while the dread of judgement past remains
15 Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,
With some regard to what is just and right
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace;
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
Corn, wine, and oil; and, from the herd or flock,
20 F321 Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,
With large wine-offerings poured, and sacred feast,
Shall spend their days in joy unblamed, and dwell
Long time in peace, by families and tribes,
Under paternal rule: till one shall rise
L1[O] Of proud ambitious heart, who, not content
C With fair equality, fraternal state,
Will arrogate dominion undeserved
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
Concord and law of Nature from the earth;
30 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)
With war and hostile snare such as refuse
S315 Subjection to his empire tyrannous.
A mighty hunter thence he shall be styled
Before the Lord, as in despite of Heaven,
35 Or from Heaven claiming second sovranity;
And from rebellion shall derive his name,
Though of rebellion others he accuse.
He with a crew, whom like ambition joins
With him or under him to tyrannize,
40 Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find
The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
Boils out from underground, the mouth of Hell.
Of brick and of that stuff they cast to build
A city and tower, whose top may reach to Heaven;
45 And get themselves a name; lest, far dispersed
In foreign lands, their memory be lost;
Regardless whether good or evil fame.
But God, who oft descends to visit men
12.49 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
To mark their doings, them beholding soon,

111 Where luxury late reigned, sea-monsters whelped **Milton**
And stabled: of mankind, so numerous late, **Paradise**
All left in one small bottom swum embarked. **S308**
How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold **Lost**
The end of all thy offspring, end so sad, **F316**
Depopulation! Thee another flood,
Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drowned,
And sunk thee as thy sons; till, gently reared
By the Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
Though comfortless, **as when a father mourns** 760
His children, all in view destroyed at once;
And scarce to the Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint:
“O visions ill foreseen! Better had I
Lived ignorant of future! so had borne
My part of evil only, each day's lot 765
Enough to bear. Those now, that were dispensed
The burden of many ages, on me light
At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth
Abortive, to torment me, ere their being,
With thought that they must be. Let no man seek 770
Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall
Him or his children; evil he may be sure,
Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
And he the future evil shall no less
In apprehension than in substance feel 775
Grievous to bear. But that care now is past; **L1[O]**
Man is not whom to warn; those few escaped **C**
Famine and anguish will at last consume,
Wandering that watery desert. I had hope,
When violence was ceased and war on Earth, 780
All would have then gone well, peace would have crowned
With length of happy days the race of Man;
But I was far deceived, for now I see
Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
How comes it thus? Unfold, Celestial Guide, 785
And whether here the race of Man will end.”
To whom thus Michael: “Those, whom last thou saw'st **S309 F317**
In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
First seen in acts of prowess eminent
And great exploits, but of true virtue void; 790
Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,
Subduing nations, and achieved thereby
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,
Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride 795
Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.
The conquered also, and enslaved by war,
Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose,
And fear of God, from whom their piety feigned
In sharp contest of battle found no aid **11.800**

♦	Against invaders; therefore, cooled in zeal, Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure, Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords Shall leave them to enjoy; for the Earth shall bear	112 (85c)	Fast on the top of some high mountain fixed. And now the tops of hills as rocks appear; With clamour thence the rapid currents drive Towards the retreating sea their furious tide.	F319
805	More than enough, that temperance may be tried. So all shall turn degenerate, all depraved, Justice and temperance, truth and faith, forgot; One man except, the only son of light In a dark age, against example good,		Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, And after him, the surer messenger, A dove, sent forth once and again to spy Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light; The second time returning, in his bill	855
810	Against allurement, custom, and a world Offended. Fearless of reproach and scorn, Or violence, he of their wicked ways Shall them admonish, and before them set The paths of righteousness, how much more safe		An olive-leaf he brings, pacific sign. Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark The ancient sire descends, with all his train. Then, with uplifted hands and eyes devout, Grateful to Heaven, over his head beholds	860
815	And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come On their impenitence; and shall return Of them derided, but of God observed The one just man alive; by his command		A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow Conspicuous with three listed colours gay, Betokening peace from God, and covenant new. Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad, Greatly rejoiced, and thus his joy broke forth:	865
F318	Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,		"O thou, who future things canst represent	870
820	To save himself and household from amidst		As present, Heavenly Instructor! I revive	
S311	A world devote to universal wrack. No sooner he, with them of man and beast Select for life, shall in the ark be lodged, And sheltered round, but all the cataracts		At this last sight, assured that Man shall live, With all the creatures, and their seed preserve. Far less I now lament for one whole world Of wicked sons destroyed, than I rejoice	875
825	Of Heaven set open on the Earth shall pour		For one man found so perfect and so just,	L1[I]
L1[I]	Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep,		That God vouchsafes to raise another world	C
C	Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise Above the highest hills. Then shall this Mount		From him, and all his anger to forget. But say, what mean those coloured streaks in Heaven, Distended as the brow of God appeased?	880
830	Of Paradise by might of waves be moved Out of his place, pushed by the horned flood, With all his verdure spoiled, and trees adrift,	10 (8c)	Or serve they, as a flowery verge to bind The fluid skirts of that same watery cloud, Lest it again dissolve and shower the Earth?"	
835	Down the great river to the opening Gulf, And there take root, an island salt and bare, The haunt of seals, and ores, and sea-mews' clang; To teach thee that God attributes to place No sanctity, if none be thither brought By men who there frequent or therein dwell. And now what further shall ensue behold."	10	To whom the Archangel: "Dextrously thou aim'st. So willingly doth God remit his ire, Though late repenting him of Man depraved; Grieved at his heart, when looking down he saw The whole Earth filled with violence, and all flesh Corrupting each their way; yet, those removed,	F320 885 S312
840	He looked, and saw the ark hull on the flood, Which now abated; for the clouds were fled, Driven by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decayed; And the clear sun on his wide watery glass		Such grace shall one just man find in his sight, That he relents, not to blot out mankind, And makes a covenant never to destroy The Earth again by flood, nor let the sea Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world With man therein or beast; but, when he brings	890 895
845	Gazed hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,		Over the Earth a cloud, will therein set	Milton
Milton	As after thirst; which made their flowing shrink		His triple-coloured bow, whereon to look	Paradise
Paradise	From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole		And call to mind his covenant. Day and night, Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,	Lost
Lost	With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopt His sluices, as the heaven his windows shut.		Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,	11.900
11.850	The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground,	116		

Milton Their inward lost: witness the irreverent son
Paradise Of him who built the ark; who, for the shame
Lost Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,
 105 **Lost** Servant of servants, on his vicious race.
 105 "Thus will this latter, as the former world,
 Still tend from bad to worse; till God at last,
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth
 110 To leave them to their own polluted ways,
 And one peculiar nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoked;
 A nation from one faithful man to spring.
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
 115 Bred up in idol-worship: O, that men
F324 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,
 While yet the patriarch lived, who 'scaped the flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in wood and stone
 120 For Gods! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes
 To call by vision, from his father's house,
 His kindred, and false Gods, into a land
 Which he will show him; and from him will raise
 A mighty nation, and upon him shower
 125 His benediction so, that in his seed
L1[O] All nations shall be blest. He straight obeys;
A Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith
 He leaves his Gods, his friends, and native soil,
 130 Ur of Chaldaea, passing now the ford
S318 To Haran; after him a cumbrous train
 Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude;
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who called him, in a land unknown.
 135 Canaan he now attains; I see his tents
 Pitched about Sechem, and the neighbouring plain
 Of Moreh; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his progeny of all that land,
 From Hameth northward to the Desert south;
 140 (Things by their names I call, though yet unnamed);
 From Hermon east to the great western Sea;
 Mount Hermon, yonder sea; each place behold
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shore
 Mount Carmel; here, the double-founted stream,
 145 Jordan, true limit eastward; but his sons
F325 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed. By that seed
 ♦ Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise
 12.150 The Serpent's head; whereof to thee anon

113

- F#^** top row of page # in Milton's
 First Edition (in 10 books)
 printed by Peter Parker (1667).
 The First Edition does not
 number pages; line 1.1 is on **F1^**.

S#^ top row of page # in Milton's
 Second Edition (in 12 books)
 printed by S. Simmon (1674)

 ♦ same row as last line
 of this edition

MILTON PARADISE LOST

2ND EDITION (1674)

IN TWELVE BOOKS

BOOK 12



EPIC
POEM
.
O
R
G
DIGITAL CLASSICS

PREVIEW
P.R. 1

A 1L 1 - 150
B 1L 151 - 350
C 2L 251 - 649

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
 A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
 WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1674)
 copy text: Donohue & Hennebery (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 649 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
 2-SIDED:
 117 to 124

NEW	A	S one who in his journey bates at moon,	114 (86C)	Comes down to see their city, ere the tower	
NEW		Though bent on speed; so here the Arch-Angel paused		Obstruct Heaven-towers, and in derision sets	F322
NEW		Betwixt the world destroyed and world restored,		Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase	
NEW		If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;		Quite out their native language; and, instead,	
5	NEW	Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes:		To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:	55
		“Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;		Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud,	
		And Man as from a second stock proceed.		Among the builders; each to other calls	
		Much thou hast yet to see; but I perceive		Not understood, all hoarse, and all in rage,	
		Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine		As mocked they storm. Great laughter was in Heaven,	
10		Must needs impair and weary human sense.		And looking down, to see the hubbub strange,	60
		Henceforth what is to come I will relate;		And hear the din: Thus was the building left	
		Thou therefore give due audience, and attend:		Ridiculous, and the work Confusion named.”	
		“This second source of Men, while yet but few,		Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeased”	
		And while the dread of judgement past remains		“O execrable son! so to aspire	
15		Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,		Above his brethren; to himself assuming	S316
		With some regard to what is just and right		Authority usurped, from God not given:	
		Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace;		He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,	
		Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,		Dominion absolute; that right we hold	
		Corn, wine, and oil; and, from the herd or flock,		By his donation; but man over men	
20	F321	Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,		He made not lord; such title to himself	70
		With large wine-offerings poured, and sacred feast,		Reserving, human left from human free.	
		Shall spend their days in joy unblamed, and dwell		But this usurper his encroachment proud	
		Long time in peace, by families and tribes,		Stays not on Man; to God his tower intends	
		Under paternal rule: till one shall rise		Siege and defiance: Wretched man! what food	
25		Of proud ambitious heart, who, not content		Will he convey up thither, to sustain	75
L1[I]		With fair equality, fraternal state,		Himself and his rash army? where thin air	L1[I]
A		Will arrogate dominion undeserved		Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,	A
		Over his brethren, and quite dispossess		And famish him of breath, if not of bread?”	
		Concord and law of Nature from the earth;		To whom thus Michael: “Justly thou abhorrest	
30		Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)		That son, who on the quiet state of men	80
		With war and hostile snare such as refuse		Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue	
S315		Subjection to his empire tyrannous.	2 (1C)	Rational liberty; yet know withal,	
		A mighty hunter thence he shall be styled		Since thy original lapse, true liberty	
		Before the Lord, as in despite of Heaven,		Is lost, which always with right reason dwells	10K F323
35		Or from Heaven claiming second sovranity;		Twinned, and from her hath no dividual being.	85
		And from rebellion shall derive his name,		Reason in man obscured, or not obeyed,	
		Though of rebellion others he accuse.		Immediately inordinate desires,	
		He with a crew, whom like ambition joins		And upstart passions catch the government	
		With him or under him to tyrannize,	2	From reason, and to servitude reduce	
40		Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find		Man, till then free. Therefore, since he permits	90
		The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge		Within himself unworthy powers to reign	
		Boils out from underground, the mouth of Hell.		Over free reason, God, in judgement just,	
		Of brick and of that stuff they cast to build		Subjects him from without to violent lords;	
		A city and tower, whose top may reach to Heaven;		Who, oft as undeservedly, enthrall	
45		And get themselves a name; lest, far dispersed		His outward freedom. Tyranny must be;	95
Milton		In foreign lands, their memory be lost;		Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.	Milton
Paradise		Regardless whether good or evil fame.		Yet sometimes nations will decline so low	Paradise
Lost		But God, who oft descends to visit men		From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong	S317
♦		Unseen, and through their habitations walks		But justice, and some fatal curse annexed,	Lost
12.50		To mark their doings, them beholding soon,	118	Deprives them of their outward liberty;	12.100

	With purpose to resign them in full time	115 (87C)	Plainlier shall be revealed. This patriarch blest,	
Milton	Up to a better covenant, disciplined		Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,	Milton
Paradise	From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,		A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves;	Paradise
Lost	From imposition of strict laws to free		Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.	Lost
305	Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear		The grandchild, with twelve sons increased, departs	155
	To filial, works of law to works of faith.		From Canaan to a land hereafter called	
	And therefore shall not Moses, though of God		Egypt, divided by the river Nile.	
F330	Highly beloved, being but the minister		See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths	
	Of law, his people into Canaan lead;		Into the sea. To sojourn in that land	
310	But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call,		He comes, invited by a younger son	160
	His name and office bearing, who shall quell		In time of dearth, a son whose worthy deeds	
	The adversary-Serpent, and bring back		Raise him to be the second in that realm	
	Through the world's wilderness long-wandered Man		Of Pharaoh. There he dies, and leaves his race	
	Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.		Growing into a nation, and now grown	S319
315	Meanwhile they, in their earthly Canaan placed,		Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks	165
	Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins		To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests	
	National interrupt their public peace,		Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves	
	Provoking God to raise them enemies;		Inhospitably, and kills their infant males:	
	From whom as oft he saves them penitent		Till by two brethren (these two brethren call	
320	By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom		Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim	170
	The second, both for piety renowned		His people from enthrallment, they return,	
	And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive		With glory and spoil, back to their promised land.	
	Irrevocable, that his regal throne		But first the lawless tyrant who denies	
	For ever shall endure. The like shall sing		To know their God, or message to regard,	
325	All Prophecy, that of the royal stock		Must be compelled by signs and judgements dire;	175
L1[O]	Of David (so I name this king) shall rise		To blood unshed the rivers must be turned;	L1[O]
B	A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold,		Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill	B
	Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust		With loathed intrusion, and fill all the land;	
S324	All nations, and to kings foretold of kings		His cattle must of rot and murren die;	
330	The last; for of his reign shall be no end.		Blotches and blains must all his flesh emboss,	F326 180
	But first a long succession must ensue,		And all his people; thunder mixed with hail,	
	And his next son, for wealth and wisdom famed,	3 (2C)	Hail mixed with fire, must rend the Egyptians sky,	
	The clouded ark of God, till then in tents		And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls;	
	Wandering, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.		What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,	
335	Such follow him as shall be registered		A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down	185
	Part good, part bad; of bad the longer scroll;		Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;	
	Whose foul idolatries, and other faults		Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,	
	Heaped to the popular sum, will so incense		Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;	
	God, as to leave them, and expose their land,	3	Last, with one midnight stroke, all the first-born	
340 F331	Their city, his temple, and his holy ark,		Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds	190
	With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey		The river-dragon tamed at length submits	
	To that proud city, whose high walls thou sawest		To let his sojourners depart, and oft	
	Left in confusion, Babylon thence called.		Humbles his stubborn heart; but still, as ice	
	There in captivity he lets them dwell		More hardened after thaw; till, in his rage	
345	The space of seventy years, then brings them back,		Pursuing whom he late dismissed, the sea	195
	Remembering mercy, and his covenant sworn		Swallows him with his host; but them lets pass,	
	To David, stablished as the days of Heaven.		As on dry land, between two crystal walls,	S320
	Returned from Babylon by leave of kings,		Awed by the rod of Moses so to stand	
♦	Their lords, whom God disposed, the house of God		Divided, till his rescued gain their shore:	
12.350	They first re-edify, and for a while	119	Such wondrous power God to his saint will lend,	12.200

Though present in his Angel, who shall go
 Before them in a cloud and pillar of fire
 — By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire —
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 205 Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues.
 All night he will pursue, but his approach
 Darkness defends between till morning watch;
 Then, through the fiery pillar and the cloud,
 God looking forth will trouble all his host,
 210 And craze their chariot-wheels; when by command
 Moses once more his potent rod extends
 F327 Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys;
 On their embattled ranks the waves return,
 And overwhelm their war. The race elect
 215 Safe toward Canaan from the shore advance,
 Through the wild Desert, not the readiest way;
 Lest, entering on the Canaanite alarmed,
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather
 220 Inglorious life with servitude; for life
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrained in arms, where rashness leads not on.
 This also shall they gain by their delay
 In the wide wilderness; there they shall found
 225 Their government, and their great senate choose
 L1[I] Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordained.
 B God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets sound,
 230 S321 Ordain them laws; part, such as appertain
 To civil justice; part, religious rites
 Of sacrifice; informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destined Seed to bruise
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 235 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God
 To mortal ear is dreadful: they beseech
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease; he grants what they besought,
 Instructed that to God is no access
 240 Without Mediator, whose high office now
 Moses in figure bears, to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,
 And all the Prophets in their age, the times
 F328 Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus laws and rites
 245 Established, such delight hath God in Men
 Milton Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes
 Paradise Among them to set up his tabernacle,
 Lost The Holy One with mortal Men to dwell.
 ♦ By his prescript a sanctuary is framed
 12.250 Of cedar, overlaid with gold; therein

116 (88C)

4 (3C)

4

120

An ark, and in the ark his testimony,
 The records of his covenant; over these
 A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings
 Of two bright Cherubim; before him burn
 255 Seven lamps as in a Zodiac representing
 The heavenly fires. Over the tent a cloud
 Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night,
 Save when they journey; and at length they come,
 Conducted by his Angel, to the land
 260 Promised to Abraham and his seed. The rest
 Were long to tell; how many battles fought
 How many kings destroyed; and kingdoms won,
 Or how the sun shall in mid-Heaven stand still
 S322 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,
 265 Man's voice commanding, 'Sun, in Gibeon stand,
 And thou moon in the vale of Aialon,
 Till Israel overcome!' so call the third
 From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him
 His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win."
 Here Adam interposed: "O sent from Heaven,
 270 Enlightener of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast revealed, those chiefly which concern
 Just Abraham and his seed. Now first I find
 Mine eyes true-opening, and my heart much eased,
 Erewhile perplexed with thoughts what would become
 275 Of me and all mankind; but now I see
 F329 L1[I] His day, in whom all nations shall be blest,
 B Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.
 280 This yet I apprehend not, why to those
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on Earth
 So many and so various laws are given;
 So many laws argue so many sins
 Among them; how can God with such reside?
 To whom thus Michael: "Doubt not but that sin
 285 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;
 And therefore was law given them, to evince
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up
 Sin against law to fight: that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove,
 290 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,
 Just for unjust; that, in such righteousness
 To them by faith imputed, they may find
 295 Justification towards God, and peace
 S323 Milton Of conscience; which the law by ceremonies
 Paradise Cannot appease, nor Man the mortal part
 Lost Perform, and not performing cannot live.
 12.300 So law appears imperfect, and but given

Milton Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since
Paradise With dread attending when that fatal wound
Regained Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve
 Upon my head. Long the decrees of Heaven
 Delay, for longest time to Him is short;
 And now, too soon for us, the circling hours
 This dreaded time have compassed, wherein we
 Must bide the stroke of that long-threatened wound
 60 (At least, if so we can, and by the head
 Broken be not intended all our power
 To be infringed, our freedom and our being
 In this fair empire won of Earth and Air) —
 For this ill news I bring: The Woman's Seed,
 65 Destined to this, is late of woman born.
F5 His birth to our just fear gave no small cause;
 But his growth now to youth's full flower, displaying
 All virtue, grace and wisdom to achieve
 Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.
 70 Before him a great Prophet, to proclaim
^^2K His coming, is sent harbinger, who all
 Invites, and in the consecrated stream
 Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so
 Purified to receive him pure, or rather
 75 To do him honour as their King. All come,
 And he himself among them was baptized —
L1[O] Not thence to be more pure, but to receive
C The testimony of Heaven, that who he is
 Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw
 80 The Prophet do him reverence; on him, rising
 Out of the water, Heaven above the clouds
 Unfold her crystal doors; thence on his head
 A perfect dove descend (whate'er it meant);
 And out of Heaven the sovereign voice I heard,
F6 'This is my Son beloved, — in him am pleased.'
 His mother, then, is mortal, but his Sire
 He who obtains the monarchy of Heaven;
 And what will He not do to advance his Son?
 His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,
 90 When his fierce thunder drove us to the Deep;
 Who this is we must learn, for Man he seems
 In all his lineaments, though in his face
 The glimpses of his Father's glory shine.
 Ye see our danger on the utmost edge
 95 Of hazard, which admits no long debate,
 But must with something sudden be opposed
 (Not force, but well-couched fraud, well-woven snares),
 Ere in the head of nations he appear,
 Their king, their leader, and supreme on Earth.
1.100 I, when no other durst, sole undertook
1.101 The dismal expedition to find out
 ♦ And ruin Adam, and the exploit performed

117

In mean estate live moderate, till, grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow. **Milton**
 But first among the priests dissention springs, **Paradise**
 Men who attend the altar, and should most **Lost**
 Endeavour peace, their strife pollution brings 355
 Upon the temple itself: at last they seise
 The scepter and regard not David's sons,
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed King, Messiah, might be born
 Barred of his right; yet at his birth a star, 360
 Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come;
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire **S325**
 His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold.
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night; 365
 They gladly thither haste, and by a quire
 Of squadroned Angels hear his carol sung.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire
 The power of the Most High. He shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign 370
 With Earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens."
 He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy **F332**
 Surcharged, as had like grief been dewed in tears,
 Without the vent of words; which these he breathed:
 "O prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand **L1[O]**
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have searched in vain; **C**
 Why our great Expectation should be called
 The seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of Heaven, yet from my loins 380
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God Most High: so God with Man unites.
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain. Say where and when
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel." 385
 To whom thus Michael: "Dream not of their fight,
 As of a duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel. Not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil
 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome 390
 Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound;
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 In thee and in thy seed; nor can this be, **S326**
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the law of God, imposed
 On penalty of death, and suffering death,
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will growl **12.400**

121

So only can high Justice rest appaid.
 The law of God exact he shall fulfill
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 F333 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment
 405 He shall endure, by coming in the flesh
 To a reproachful life and cursed death;
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption; and that his obedience
 Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits
 410 To save them, not their own, though legal, works.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphemed,
 Seised on by force, judged, and to death condemned
 A shameful and accursed, nailed to the cross
 By his own nation; slain for bringing life;
 415 But to the cross he nails thy enemies,
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucified,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,
 420 But soon revives; Death over him no power
 Shall long usurp. Ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,
 425 His death for Man, as many as offered life
 L1[I] Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 C By faith not void of works. This Godlike act
 S327 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldest have died,
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act
 430 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms,
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings
 Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
 435 A gentle wafting to immortal life.
 F334 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times to appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life
 Still followed him; to them shall leave in charge
 440 To teach all nations what of him they learned
 And his salvation; them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream; the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,
 445 For death, like that which the Redeemer died.
 Milton All nations they shall teach; for from that day,
 Paradise Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Lost Salvation shall be preached, but to the sons
 ♦ Of Abraham's faith, wherever through the world;
 12.450 So in his seed all nations shall be blest.

118

6

6

122

By one man's disobedience lost, now sing
 Recovered Paradise to all mankind,
 By one man's firm obedience fully tried
 Through all temptation, and the Tempter foiled
 5 In all his wiles, defeated and repulsed,
 And Eden raised in the waste Wilderness.
 Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite
 Into the desert, his victorious field
 F2
 Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence
 10 By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire,
 As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,
 And bear through highth or depth of Nature's bounds,
 With prosperous wing full summed, to tell of deeds
 Above heroic, though in secret done,
 15 And unrecorded left through many an age:
 Worthy to have not remained so long unsung.
 Now had the great Proclaimer, with a voice
 More awful than the sound of trumpet, cried
 Repentance, and Heaven's kingdom nigh at hand
 20 To all baptized. To his great baptism flocked
 With awe the regions round, and with them came
 From Nazareth the son of Joseph deemed
 To the flood Jordan — came as then obscure,
 Unmarked, unknown. But him the Baptist soon
 25 Descried, divinely warned, and witness bore
 As to his worthier, and would have resigned
 L1[I] To him his heavenly office. Nor was long
 F3 C
 His witness unconfirmed: on him baptized
 Heaven opened, and in likeness of a dove
 30 The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice
 From Heaven pronounced him his beloved Son.
 That heard the Adversary, who, roving still
 About the world, at that assembly famed
 Would not be last, and, with the voice divine
 35 Nigh thunder-struck, the exalted man to whom
 Such high attest was given a while surveyed
 With wonder; then, with envy fraught and rage,
 Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air
 40 To council summons all his mighty peers,
 Within thick clouds and dark tenfold involved
 A gloomy consistory; and them amidst,
 With looks aghast and sad, he thus bespake: —
 "O ancient Powers of Air and this wide World
 (For much more willingly I mention Air,
 45 This our old conquest, than remember Hell,
 Our hated habitation), well ye know
 F4
 How many ages, as the years of men,
 Milton
 This Universe we have possessed, and ruled
 Paradise
 In manner at our will the affairs of Earth, 1.50 Regained
 Since Adam and his facile consort Eve 1.51

(For by the Woman's seed) on all mankind;
Milton That ye may live, which will be many days,
Paradise Both in one faith unanimous, though sad
Lost With cause, for evils past, yet much more cheered
605 With meditation on the happy end."
He ended, and they both descend the hill.
Descended, Adam to the bower where Eve
Lay sleeping ran before her, but found her waked,
And thus with words not sad she him received:
610 "Whence thou returnest, and whither wentest, I know;
For God is also in sleep; and dreams advise,
Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress
Wearied I fell asleep. But now lead on;
615 In me is no delay; with thee to go,
Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,
Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me
Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,
Who for my willful crime art banished hence.
620 This further consolation yet secure
I carry hence; though all by me is lost,
Such favour I unworthy am vouchsafed,
By me the Promised Seed shall all restore."
So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard
625 Well pleased, but answered not; for now, too nigh
L2[O] **S333** The Arch-Angel stood; and from the other hill
C To their fixed station, all in bright array,
F341 The Cherubim descended; on the ground
Gliding meteorous, **as evening mist**
630 **Risen from a river, o'er the marish glides,**
And gathers ground fast at the laborer's heel,
Homeward returning. High in front advanced,
The brandished sword of God before them blazed,
Fierce as a comet, which with torrid heat,
635 **And vapor as the Libyan air adust,**
Began to parch that temperate clime; whereat
In either hand the hastening Angel caught
Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
640 To the subjected plain; then disappeared.
They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
Waved over by that flaming brand; the gate
With dreadful faces thronged and fiery arms.
645 Some natural tears they dropt, but wiped them soon;
The world was all before them, where to choose
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.
They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,
12.649 ♦ **I** Through Eden took their solitary way.
1.1 **F1** **I**, who erewhile the happy Garden sung

119

Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend
With victory, triumphing through the air
Milton Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise
Paradise The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains
Lost Through all his realm, and there confounded leave;
455 Then enter into glory, and resume
His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
Above all names in Heaven; and thence shall come,
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead;
460 To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward
S328 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
Whether in Heaven or Earth; for then the Earth
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
Than this of Eden, and far happier days."
465 So spake the Arch-Angel Michael; then paused,
As at the World's great period; and our sire,
Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied:
F335 "O Goodness infinite, Goodness immense!
That all this good of evil shall produce,
470 And evil turn to good; more wonderful
Than that which by creation first brought forth
Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,
Whether I should repent me now of sin
By me done, and occasioned; or rejoice
475 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring;
L2[O] To God more glory, more good-will to Men
C From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.
But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven
Must reascend, what will betide the few
480 His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,
The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide
His people, who defend? Will they not deal
Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?"
"Be sure they will," said the Angel; "but from Heaven
485 He to his own a Comforter will send,
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
His Spirit within them, and the law of faith,
Working through love upon their hearts shall write,
To guide them in all truth; and also arm
490 With spiritual armour, able to resist
Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts;
What man can do against them not afraid,
Though to the death; against such cruelties
S323("32") With inward consolations recompensed,
495 And oft supported so as shall amaze
Their proudest persecutors. For the Spirit,
Poured first on his Apostles, whom he sends
To evangelize the nations, then on all
Baptized, shall them with wonderous gifts endue **F336** 12.500

To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from Heaven: at length
 505 Their ministry performed, and race well run,
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven
 510 To their own vile advantages shall turn
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions taint,
 Left only in those written records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.
 515 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular power; though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Spirit of God, promised alike and given
 520 To all believers; and from that pretence
 Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force
 On every conscience; laws which none shall find
 Left them inrolled, or what the Spirit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
 525 But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind
L2[I] His consort, Liberty? what, but unbuild
C S330 His living temples, built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith, not another's? for, on Earth,
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 530 Infallible? yet many will presume.
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
F337 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of spirit and truth; the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 535 Religion satisfied; Truth shall retire
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found. So shall the world go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,
 Under her own weight groaning; till the day
 540 Appear of respiration to the just,
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promised to thy aid,
 The Woman's Seed; obscurely then foretold,
 Now ampler known thy Saviour and thy Lord;
 545 Last, in the clouds, from Heaven to be revealed
Milton In glory of the Father, to dissolve
Paradise Satan with his perverted world; then raise
Lost From the conflagrant mass, purged and refined,
 ♦ New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,
 12.550 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love;

120 (89c)

8 (4c)

8

124

To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.”
 He ended; and thus Adam last replied:
 “How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,
 Measured this transient world, the race of time,
 Till time stand fixed! Beyond is all abyss, 555
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart;
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. **S331** 560
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe
 His providence, and on him sole depend, **F338**
 Merciful over all his works, with good 565
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deemed weak
 Subverting worldly-strong, and worldly-wise
 By simply-meek: that suffering for truth's sake
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570
 And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;
 Taught this by his example, whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.”
 To whom thus also the Angel last replied:
 This having learned, thou hast attained the sum 575
 Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the stars **L2[I]**
 Thou knewest by name, and all the ethereal powers, **C**
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,
 Or works of God in Heaven, air, earth, or sea,
 And all the riches of this world enjoyedst, 580
 And all the rule, one empire. Only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance; add love,
 By name to come called charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loth 585
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A Paradise within thee, happier far. —
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation; for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence. And see! the guards, 590
 By me encamped on yonder hill, expect
 Their motion; at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round. **S332**
 We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve.
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calmed
 Portending good, and all her spirits composed **F339**
 To meek submission thou, at season fit, **Milton**
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard; **Paradise**
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know, **Lost**
 The great deliverance by her seed to come 12.600

The Poetical Works of John Milton,
ed. H. J. Todd, vol 1 (1809)



MILTON

PARADISE REGAINED

WITH
PREVIEWS



.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

INTERLEAVABLE



3.0

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

This **UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE LAYOUT** of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

The **RESTRICTED INTERLEAVED LAYOUT** of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT requires a license available only at [SEAHANDPRESS.COM](https://seahandpress.com) (LINK).

Notes

Notes

Milton The dismal expedition to find out
 Paradise ♦ And ruin Adam, and the exploit performed
 Regained Successfully: a calmer voyage now
 F7 Will waft me; and the way found prosperous once
 105 Induces best to hope of like success.”
 He ended, and his words impression left
 Of much amazement to the infernal crew,
 Distracted and surprised with deep dismay
 At these sad tidings. But no time was then
 110 For long indulgence to their fears or grief:
 Unanimous they all commit the care
 And management of this main enterprise
 To him, their great Dictator, whose attempt
 At first against mankind so well had thrived
 115 In Adam’s overthrow, and led their march
 From Hell’s deep-vaulted den to dwell in light,
 Regents, and potentates, and kings, yea gods,
 Of many a pleasant realm and province wide.
 So to the coast of Jordan he directs
 120 His easy steps, girded with snaky wiles,
 Where he might likeliest find this new-declared,
 This man of men, attested Son of God,
 F8 Temptation and all guile on him to try —
 So to subvert whom he suspected raised
 125 To end his reign on Earth so long enjoyed:
 L1[O] But, contrary, unweeting he fulfilled
 A The purposed counsel, pre-ordained and fixed,
 Of the Most High, who, in full frequency bright
 Of Angels, thus to Gabriel smiling spake: —
 130 “Gabriel, this day, by proof, thou shalt behold,
 Thou and all Angels conversant on Earth
 With Man or men’s affairs, how I begin
 To verify that solemn message late,
 On which I sent thee to the Virgin pure
 135 In Galilee, that she should bear a son,
 Great in renown, and called the Son of God.
 Then told’st her, doubting how these things could be
 To her a virgin, that on her should come
 The Holy Ghost, and the power of the Highest
 140 O’ershadow her. This Man, born and now upgrown,
 To shew him worthy of his birth divine
 F9 And high prediction, henceforth I expose
 To Satan; let him tempt, and now assay
 His utmost subtlety, because he boasts
 145 And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng
 Of his apostasy. He might have learnt
 Less overweening, since he failed in Job,
 Whose constant perseverance overcame
 Whate’er his cruel malice could invent.
 1.150 He now shall know I can produce a man,

121

1

1

F#A top row of page # in First Edition
 (1671) [Link](#).

♦ row of last line of this edition

MILTON PARADISE REGAINED BOOK 1

PREVIEW
Book 2



DIGITAL CLASSICS

A 1L 1 - 150
B 2L 151 - 502

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
 A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
 WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1671)
 copy text: D. Masson (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](#) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 502 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:
127 to 132

3

127

F1	I	, WHO erewhile the happy Garden sung	122 (90c)	Since Adam and his facile consort Eve	
♦		By one man's disobedience lost, now sing	2 (1c)	Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since	
		Recovered Paradise to all mankind,		With dread attending when that fatal wound	
		By one man's firm obedience fully tried		Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve	
5		Through all temptation, and the Tempter foiled		Upon my head. Long the decrees of Heaven	55
		In all his wiles, defeated and repulsed,		Delay, for longest time to Him is short;	
		And Eden raised in the waste Wilderness.		And now, too soon for us, the circling hours	
		Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite		This dreaded time have compassed, wherein we	
F2		Into the desert, his victorious field		Must bide the stroke of that long-threatened wound	
10		Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence		(At least, if so we can, and by the head	60
		By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire,		Broken be not intended all our power	
		As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,		To be infringed, our freedom and our being	
		And bear through highth or depth of Nature's bounds,		In this fair empire won of Earth and Air) —	
		With prosperous wing full summed, to tell of deeds		For this ill news I bring: The Woman's Seed,	
15		Above heroic, though in secret done,		Destined to this, is late of woman born.	65
		And unrecorded left through many an age:		His birth to our just fear gave no small cause;	F5
		Worthy to have not remained so long unsung.		But his growth now to youth's full flower, displaying	
		Now had the great Proclaimer, with a voice		All virtue, grace and wisdom to achieve	
		More awful than the sound of trumpet, cried		Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.	
20		Repentance, and Heaven's kingdom nigh at hand		Before him a great Prophet, to proclaim	70
		To all baptized. To his great baptism flocked		His coming, is sent harbinger, who all	^^2K
		With awe the regions round, and with them came		Invites, and in the consecrated stream	
		From Nazareth the son of Joseph deemed		Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so	
		To the flood Jordan — came as then obscure,		Purified to receive him pure, or rather	
25		Unmarked, unknown. But him the Baptist soon		To do him honour as their King. All come,	75
L1[I]		Descried, divinely warned, and witness bore		And he himself among them was baptized —	L1[I]
A		As to his worthier, and would have resigned		Not thence to be more pure, but to receive	A
F3		To him his heavenly office. Nor was long		The testimony of Heaven, that who he is	
		His witness unconfirmed: on him baptized		Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw	
30		Heaven opened, and in likeness of a dove		The Prophet do him reverence; on him, rising	80
		The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice		Out of the water, Heaven above the clouds	
		From Heaven pronounced him his beloved Son.	2 (1c)	Unfold her crystal doors; thence on his head	
		That heard the Adversary, who, roving still		A perfect dove descend (whate'er it meant);	
		About the world, at that assembly famed		And out of Heaven the sovereign voice I heard,	
35		Would not be last, and, with the voice divine		'This is my Son beloved, — in him am pleased.'	F6
		Nigh thunder-struck, the exalted man to whom		His mother, then, is mortal, but his Sire	
		Such high attest was given a while surveyed		He who obtains the monarchy of Heaven;	
		With wonder; then, with envy fraught and rage,		And what will He not do to advance his Son?	
		Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air	2	His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,	
40		To council summons all his mighty peers,		When his fierce thunder drove us to the Deep;	90
		Within thick clouds and dark tenfold involved		Who this is we must learn, for Man he seems	
		A gloomy consistory; and them amidst,		In all his lineaments, though in his face	
		With looks aghast and sad, he thus bespake: —		The glimpses of his Father's glory shine.	
		“O ancient Powers of Air and this wide World		Ye see our danger on the utmost edge	
45		(For much more willingly I mention Air,		Of hazard, which admits no long debate,	95
Milton		This our old conquest, than remember Hell,		But must with something sudden be opposed	Milton
F4		Our hated habitation), well ye know		(Not force, but well-couched fraud, well-woven snares),	Paradise
Paradise		How many ages, as the years of men,		Ere in the head of nations he appear,	Regained
Regained		This Universe we have possessed, and ruled	4	Their king, their leader, and supreme on Earth.	
1.50		In manner at our will the affairs of Earth,	128	I, when no other durst, sole undertook	1.100

Milton The desert; fowls in their clay nests were couched;
1.502 ♦ And now wild beasts came forth the woods to roam.
2.1 F28 **M**EANWHILE the new-baptized, who yet remained
Paradise At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen
Regained Him whom they heard so late expressly called
Jesus Messiah, Son of God, declared,
5 And on that high authority had believed,
And with him talked, and with him lodged — I mean
Andrew and Simon, famous after known,
With others, though in Holy Writ not named —
Now missing him, their joy so lately found,
10 So lately found and so abruptly gone,
Began to doubt, and doubted many days,
F29 And, as the days increased, increased their doubt.
Sometimes they thought he might be only shown,
And for a time caught up to God, as once
15 Moses was in the Mount and missing long,
And the great Thisbite, who on fiery wheels
Rode up to Heaven, yet once again to come.
Therefore, as those young prophets then with care
Sought lost Eliah, so in each place these
20 Nigh to Bethabara — in Jericho
The city of palms, Aenon, and Salem old,
Machaerus, and each town or city walled
On this side the broad lake Genezaret,
L1[O] Or in Peraea — but returned in vain.
B Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek,
Where winds with reeds and osiers whispering play,
Plain fishermen (no greater men them call),
Close in a cottage low together got,
Their unexpected loss and complaints outbreathed:
30 “Alas, from what high hope to what relapse
F30 Unlooked for are we fallen! Our eyes beheld
Messiah certainly now come, so long
Expected of our fathers; we have heard
His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth.
35 ‘Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand;
♦ The kingdom shall to Israel be restored:’
Thus we rejoiced, but soon our joy is turned
40 Into perplexity and new amaze.
For whither is he gone? what accident
Hath rapt him from us? will he now retire
After appearance, and again prolong
Our expectation? God of Israel,
Send thy Messiah forth; the time is come.
Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress
45 Thy Chosen, to what highth their power unjust
They have exalted, and behind them cast
All fear of Thee; arise, and vindicate
2.48 Thy glory; free thy people from their yoke!

123

3

3

3

5

129

Of female seed, far abler to resist
All his solicitations, and at length
Milton
All his vast force, and drive him back to Hell — **Paradise**
Winning by conquest what the first man lost **Regained**
By fallacy surprised. But first I mean 155
To exercise him in the Wilderness;
There he shall first lay down the rudiments
Of his great warfare, ere I send him forth
To conquer Sin and Death, the two grand foes.
By humiliation and strong sufferance 160
His weakness shall o’ercome Satanic strength, **F10**
And all the world, and mass of sinful flesh;
That all the Angels and ethereal Powers —
They now, and men hereafter — may discern
From what consummate virtue I have chose 165
This perfect man, by merit called my Son,
To earn salvation for the sons of men.”
So spake the Eternal Father, and all Heaven
Admiring stood a space; then into hymns
Burst forth, and in celestial measures moved, 170
Circling the throne and singing, while the hand
Sung with the voice, and this the argument: —
“Victory and triumph to the Son of God,
Now entering his great duel, not of arms,
But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles! 175
The Father knows the Son; therefore secure **L1[O]**
Ventures his filial virtue, though untried, **B**
Against whate’er may tempt, whate’er seduce,
Allure, or terrify, or undermine.
Be frustrate, all ye stratagems of Hell, **F11** 180
And, devilish machinations, come to nought!”
So they in Heaven their odes and vigils tuned.
Meanwhile the Son of God, who yet some days
Lodged in Bethabara, where John baptized,
Musing and much revolving in his breast 185
How best the mighty work he might begin
Of Saviour to mankind, and which way first
Publish his godlike office now mature,
One day forth walked alone, the Spirit leading
And his deep thoughts, the better to converse 190
With solitude, till, far from track of men,
Thought following thought, and step by step led on,
He entered now the bordering Desert wild,
And, with dark shades and rocks environed round,
His holy meditations thus pursued: — 195
“O what a multitude of thoughts at once
Awakened in me swarm, while I consider
What from within I feel myself, and hear
What from without comes often to my ears, **F12**
Ill sorting with my present state compared! 1.200

But let us wait; thus far He hath performed —

◆	When I was yet a child, no childish play To me was pleasing; all my mind was set Serious to learn and know, and thence to do, What might be public good; myself I thought	124 (91c) 4 (2c)	To thy adorers? Thou, with trembling fear, Or like a fawning parasite , obey'st; Then to thyself ascrib'st the truth foretold. But this thy glory shall be soon retrenched;	
205	Born to that end, born to promote all truth, All righteous things. Therefore, above my years, The Law of God I read, and found it sweet; Made it my whole delight, and in it grew To such perfection that, ere yet my age		No more shalt thou by oracling abuse The Gentiles; henceforth oracles are ceased, And thou no more with pomp and sacrifice Shalt be enquired at Delphos or elsewhere — At least in vain, for they shall find thee mute.	455
210	Had measured twice six years, at our great Feast I went into the Temple, there to hear The teachers of our Law, and to propose What might improve my knowledge or their own, And was admired by all. Yet this not all		God hath now sent his living Oracle Into the world to teach his final will, And sends his Spirit of Truth henceforth to dwell In pious hearts, an inward oracle To all truth requisite for men to know.”	460
215	To which my spirit aspired. Victorious deeds Flamed in my heart, heroic acts — one while To rescue Israel from the Roman yoke;		So spake our Saviour; but the subtle Fiend, Though inly stung with anger and disdain, Dissembled, and this answer smooth returned: —	F26
F13	Then to subdue and quell, o'er all the earth, Brute violence and proud tyrannic power,		“Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke, And urged me hard with doings which not will, But misery, hath wrested from me. Where	470
220	Till truth were freed, and equity restored: Yet held it more humane, more heavenly, first By winning words to conquer willing hearts, And make persuasion do the work of fear; At least to try, and teach the erring soul,		Easily canst thou find one miserable, And not enforced oft-times to part from truth, If it may stand him more in stead to lie, Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure?	
225	Not wilfully misdoing, but unaware		But thou art placed above me; thou art Lord;	475
L1[I]	Misled; the stubborn only to subdue.		From thee I can, and must, submit, endure	L1[I]
B	These growing thoughts my mother soon perceiving, By words at times cast forth, inly rejoiced, And said to me apart, ‘High are thy thoughts,		Cheek or reproof, and glad to scape so quit.	B
230	O Son! but nourish them, and let them soar To what highth sacred virtue and true worth Can raise them, though above example high; By matchless deeds express thy matchless Sire.	4 (2c)	Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk, Smooth on the tongue discoursed, pleasing to the ear, And tunable as sylvan pipe or song;	480
	For know, thou art no son of mortal man;		What wonder, then, if I delight to hear Her dictates from thy mouth? most men admire Virtue who follow not her lore. Permit me	
235	Though men esteem thee low of parentage, Thy Father is the Eternal King who rules		To hear thee when I come (since no man comes),	F27
F14	All Heaven and Earth, Angels and sons of men. A messenger from God foretold thy birth Conceived in me a virgin; he foretold	4	And talk at least, though I despair to attain. Thy Father, who is holy, wise, and pure, Suffers the hypocrite or atheous priest To tread his sacred courts, and minister	485
240	Thou shouldst be great, and sit on David's throne, And of thy kingdom there should be no end. At thy nativity a glorious quire Of Angels, in the fields of Bethlehem, sung To shepherds, watching at their folds by night,		About his altar, handling holy things, Praying or vowing, and voutsafed his voice To Balaam reprobate, a prophet yet Inspired: disdain not such access to me.”	490
245	And told them the Messiah now was born,		To whom our Saviour, with unaltered brow: — “Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,	495
Milton	Where they might see him; and to thee they came,		I bid not or forbid. Do as thou find'st	Milton
Paradise	Directed to the manger where thou lay'st;		Permission from above; thou canst not more.”	Paradise
Regained	For in the inn was left no better room. A star, not seen before, in heaven appearing,	6	He added not; and Satan, bowing low His gray dissimulation, disappeared,	Regained
1.250	Guided the wise men thither from the East,	130	Into thin air diffused: for now began Night with her sullen wing to double-shade	1.500

That fellowship in pain divides not smart,
Milton ♦ Nor lightens aught each man's peculiar load;
Paradise Small consolation, then, were Man adjoined.
Regained This wounds me most (what can it less?) that Man,
405 Man fallen, shall be restored, I never more."
To whom our Saviour sternly thus replied: —
F23 "Deservedly thou griev'st, composed of lies
From the beginning, and in lies wilt end,
Who boast'st release from Hell, and leave to come
410 Into the Heaven of Heavens. Thou com'st, indeed,
As a poor miserable captive thrall
Comes to the place where he before had sat
Among the prime in splendour, now deposed,
Ejected, emptied, gazed, unpitied, shunned,
415 **A spectacle of ruin, or of scorn,**
To all the host of Heaven. The happy place
Imparts to thee no happiness, no joy —
Rather inflames thy torment, representing
Lost bliss, to thee no more communicable;
420 So never more in Hell than when in Heaven.
But thou art serviceable to Heaven's King!
Wilt thou impute to obedience what thy fear
Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites?
What but thy malice moved thee to misdeem
425 Of righteous Job, then cruelly to afflict him
L2[O] With all inflictions? but his patience won.
B F24 The other service was thy chosen task,
To be a liar in four hundred mouths;
For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.
430 Yet thou pretend'st to truth! all oracles
By thee are given, and what confessed more true
Among the nations? That hath been thy craft,
By mixing somewhat true to vent more lies.
But what have been thy answers? what but dark,
v11K Ambiguous, and with double sense deluding,
Which they who asked have seldom understood,
And, not well understood, as good not known?
Who ever, by consulting at thy shrine,
Returned the wiser, or the more instruct
440 To fly or follow what concerned him most,
And run not sooner to his fatal snare?
For God hath justly given the nations up
To thy delusions; justly, since they fell
Idoltrous. But, when his purpose is
445 Among them to declare his providence,
F25 To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy truth,
But from Him, or his Angels president
In every province, who, themselves disdaining
To approach thy temples, give thee in command
1.450 What, to the smallest tittle, thou shalt say

125 (92C)

5 (3C)

5 (3C)

5

7

131

To honour thee with incense, myrrh, and gold;
By whose bright course led on they found the place,
Affirming it thy star, new-graven in heaven,
By which they knew thee King of Israel born.
Just Simeon and prophetic Anna, warned
By vision, found thee in the Temple, and spake,
Before the altar and the vested priest,
Like things of thee to all that present stood.
This having heart, straight I again revolved
The Law and Prophets, searching what was writ
Concerning the Messiah, to our scribes
Known partly, and soon found of whom they spake
I am — this chiefly, that my way must lie
Through many a hard assay, even to the death,
Ere I the promised kingdom can attain,
Or work redemption for mankind, whose sins'
Full weight must be transferred upon my head.
Yet, neither thus disheartened or dismayed,
The time prefixed I waited; when behold
The Baptist (of whose birth I oft had heard,
Not knew by sight) now come, who was to come
Before Messiah, and his way prepare!
I, as all others, to his baptism came,
Which I believed was from above; but he
Straight knew me, and with loudest voice proclaimed
Me him (for it was shewn him so from Heaven) —
Me him whose harbinger he was; and first
Refused on me his baptism to confer,
As much his greater, and was hardly won.
But, as I rose out of the laving stream,
Heaven opened her eternal doors, from whence
The Spirit descended on me **like a dove**;
And last, the sum of all, my Father's voice,
Audibly heard from Heaven, pronounced me his,
Me his beloved Son, in whom alone
He was well pleased: by which I knew the time
Now full, that I no more should live obscure,
But openly begin, as best becomes
The authority which I derived from Heaven.
And now by some strong motion I am led
Into this wilderness; to what intent
I learn not yet. Perhaps I need not know;
For what concerns my knowledge God reveals."
So spake our Morning Star, then in his rise,
And, looking round, on every side beheld
A pathless desert, dusk with horrid shades.
The way he came not having marked, return,
Was difficult, by human steps untrod;
And he still on was led, but with such thoughts
Accompanied of things past and to come

Milton

Paradise

Regained

255

F15

260

265

270

F16

L2[O]

B

280

285

290

F17

295

1.300

◆	Lodged in his breast as well might recommend	126 (93c)	Our fathers here with manna? In the Mount	F20
	Such solitude before choicest society.	6 (4c)	Moses was forty days, nor eat nor drank;	
	Full forty days he passed — whether on hill		And forty days Eliah without food	
	Sometimes, anon in shady vale, each night		Wandered this barren waste; the same I now.	
305	Under the covert of some ancient oak		Why dost thou, then, suggest to me distrust	355
	Or cedar to defend him from the dew,		Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?"	
	Or harboured in one cave, is not revealed;		Whom thus answered the Arch-Fiend, now undisguised: —	
	Nor tasted human food, nor hunger felt,		"'Tis true, I am that Spirit unfortunate	
	Till those days ended; hungered then at last		Who, leagued with millions more in rash revolt,	
310	Among wild beasts. They at his sight grew mild,		Kept not my happy station, but was driven	360
	Nor sleeping him nor waking harmed; his walk		With them from bliss to the bottomless Deep —	
	The fiery serpent fled and noxious worm;		Yet to that hideous place not so confined	
F18	The lion and fierce tiger glared aloof.		By rigour unconniving but that oft,	
	But now an aged man in rural weeds,		Leaving my dolorous prison, I enjoy	
315	Following, as seemed, the quest of some stray ewe,		Large liberty to round this globe of Earth,	365
	Or withered sticks to gather, which might serve		Or range in the Air; nor from the Heaven of Heavens	
	Against a winter's day, when winds blow keen,		Hath he excluded my resort sometimes.	
	To warm him wet returned from field at eve,		I came, among the Sons of God, when he	
	He saw approach; who first with curious eye		Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job,	
320	Perused him, then with words thus uttered spake: —		To prove him, and illustrate his high worth;	F21 370
	"Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place,		And, when to all his Angels he proposed	
	So far from path or road of men, who pass		To draw the proud king Ahab into fraud,	
	In troop or caravan? for single none		That he might fall in Ramoth, they demurring,	
	Durst ever, who returned, and dropt not here		I undertook that office, and the tongues	
325	His carcass, pined with hunger and with droughth.		Of all his flattering prophets glibbed with lies	375
L2[I]	I ask the rather, and the more admire,		To his destruction, as I had in charge:	L2[I]
B	For that to me thou seem'st the man whom late		For what He bids I do. Though I have lost	B
	Our new baptizing Prophet at the ford		Much lustre of my native brightness, lost	
	Of Jordan honoured so, and called thee Son		To be beloved of God, I have not lost	
330	Of God. I saw and heard, for we sometimes		To love, at least contemplate and admire,	380
	Who dwell this wild, constrained by want, come forth		What I see excellent in good, or fair,	
F19	To town or village nigh (nighest is far),	6 (4c)	Or virtuous; I should so have lost all sense.	
	Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,		What can be then less in me than desire	
	What happens new; fame also finds us out."		To see thee and approach thee, whom I know	
335	To whom the Son of God: — "Who brought me hither		Declared the Son of God, to hear attent	385
	Will bring me hence; no other guide I seek."		Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds?	
	"By miracle he may," replied the swain;		Men generally think me much a foe	
	"What other way I see not; for we here		To all mankind. Why should I? they to me	
	Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inured	6	Never did wrong or violence. By them	F22
340	More than the camel, and to drink go far —		I lost not what I lost; rather by them	390
	Men to much misery and hardship born.		I gained what I have gained, and with them dwell	
	But, if thou be the Son of God, command		Copartner in these regions of the World,	
	That out of these hard stones be made thee bread;		If not disposer — lend them oft my aid,	
	So shalt thou save thyself, and us relieve		Oft my advice by presages and signs,	
345	With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste."		And answers, oracles, portents, and dreams,	395
Milton	He ended, and the Son of God replied: —		Whereby they may direct their future life.	Milton
Paradise	"Think'st thou such force in bread? Is it not written		Envy, they say, excites me, thus to gain	Paradise
Regained	(For I discern thee other than thou seem'st),		Companions of my misery and woe!	Regained
	Man lives not by bread only, but each word	8	At first it may be; but, long since with woe	
1.350	Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed	132	Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof	1.400

F28	M	EANWHILE the new-baptized, who yet remained	128 (94C)	Though needing, what praise is it to endure?	
		At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen	8 (5C)	But now I feel I hunger; which declares	
		Him whom they heard so late expressly called		Nature hath need of what she asks. Yet God	
5		Jesus Messiah, Son of God, declared,		Can satisfy that need some other way,	
		And on that high authority had believed,		Though hunger still remain.	255
		And with him talked, and with him lodged — I mean		Without this body's wasting, I content me,	
		Andrew and Simon, famous after known,		And from the sting of famine fear no harm;	
		With others, though in Holy Writ not named —		Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts, that feed	
		Now missing him, their joy so lately found,		Me hungering more to do my Father's will."	F42
10		So lately found and so abruptly gone,		It was the hour of night, when thus the Son	260
		Began to doubt, and doubted many days,		Communed in silent walk, then laid him down	
F29		And, as the days increased, increased their doubt.		Under the hospitable covert nigh	
		Sometimes they thought he might be only shown,		Of trees thick interwoven. There he slept,	
		And for a time caught up to God, as once		And dreamed, as appetite is wont to dream,	
15		Moses was in the Mount and missing long,		Of meats and drinks, nature's refreshment sweet.	265
		And the great Thisbite, who on fiery wheels		Him thought he by the brook of Cherith stood,	
		Rode up to Heaven, yet once again to come.		And saw the ravens with their horny beaks	
		Therefore, as those young prophets then with care		Food to Elijah bringing even and morn —	
		Sought lost Eliah, so in each place these		Though ravenous, taught to abstain from what they brought;	
20		Nigh to Bethabara — in Jericho		He saw the Prophet also, how he fled	270
		The city of palms, Aenon, and Salem old,		Into the desert, and how there he slept	
		Machaerus, and each town or city walled		Under a juniper — then how, awaked,	
		On this side the broad lake Genezaret,		He found his supper on the coals prepared,	
		Or in Peraea — but returned in vain.		And by the Angel was bid rise and eat,	
25		Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek,		And eat the second time after repose,	275
L1[I]		Where winds with reeds and osiers whispering play,		The strength whereof sufficed him forty days:	L1[I]
A		Plain fishermen (no greater men them call),		Sometimes that with Elijah he partook,	A
		Close in a cottage low together got,		Or as a guest with Daniel at his pulse.	F43
		Their unexpected loss and complaints outbreathed:		Thus wore out night; and now the harald Lark	
30		"Alas, from what high hope to what relapse		Left his ground-nest, high towering to descry	280
F30		Unlooked for are we fallen! Our eyes beheld		The Morn's approach, and greet her with his song.	
		Messiah certainly now come, so long	2 (1C)	As lightly from his grassy couch up rose	
		Expected of our fathers; we have heard		Our Saviour, and found all was but a dream;	
		His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth.		Fasting he went to sleep, and fasting waked.	
35		'Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand;		Up to a hill anon his steps he reared,	285
♦		The kingdom shall to Israel be restored:'		From whose high top to ken the prospect round,	
		Thus we rejoiced, but soon our joy is turned		If cottage were in view, sheep-cote, or herd;	
		Into perplexity and new amaze.		But cottage, herd, or sheep-cote, none he saw —	
		For whither is he gone? what accident	2	Only in a bottom saw a pleasant grove,	
40		Hath rapt him from us? will he now retire		With chant of tuneful birds resounding loud.	290
		After appearance, and again prolong		Thither he bent his way, determined there	
		Our expectation? God of Israel,		To rest at noon, and entered soon the shade	
		Send thy Messiah forth; the time is come.		High-roofed, and walks beneath, and alleys brown,	
		Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress		That opened in the midst a woody scene;	
45		Thy Chosen, to what highth their power unjust		Nature's own work it seemed (Nature taught Art),	295
Milton		They have exalted, and behind them cast		And, to a superstitious eye, the haunt	Milton
Paradise		All fear of Thee; arise, and vindicate		Of wood-gods and wood-nymphs. He viewed it round;	F44
Regained		Thy glory; free thy people from their yoke!		When suddenly a man before him stood,	Paradise
		But let us wait; thus far He hath performed —	10	Not rustic as before, but seemlier clad,	Regained
2.50 F31		Sent his Anointed, and to us revealed him	134	As one in city or court or palace bred,	2.300

Milton	For Solomon, he lived at ease, and, full	129 (95c)	By his great Prophet pointed at and shown	
F39	Of honour, wealth, high fare, aimed not beyond	9 (6c)	In public, and with him we have conversed.	Milton
Paradise	Higher design than to enjoy his state;		Let us be glad of this, and all our fears	Paradise
Regained	Thence to the bait of women lay exposed.		Lay on his providence; He will not fail,	Regained
205	But he whom we attempt is wiser far		Nor will withdraw him now, nor will recall —	55
	Than Solomon, of more exalted mind,		Mock us with his blest sight, then snatch him hence:	
	Made and set wholly on the accomplishment		Soon we shall see our hope, our joy, return.”	
	Of greatest things. What woman will you find,		Thus they out of their complaints new hope resume	
	Though of this age the wonder and the fame,		To find whom at the first they found unsought.	
210	On whom his leisure will voutsafe an eye		But to his mother Mary, when she saw	60
	Of fond desire? Or should she, confident,		Others returned from baptism, not her Son,	
	As sitting queen adored on Beauty’s throne,		Nor left at Jordan tidings of him none,	
	Descend with all her winning charms begirt		Within her breast though calm, her breast though pure,	
	To enamour, as the zone of Venus once		Motherly cares and fears got head, and raised	
215	Wrought that effect on Jove (so fables tell),		Some troubled thoughts, which she in sighs thus clad: —	65
	How would one look from his majestic brow,		“Oh, what avails me now that honour high,	
	Seated as on the top of Virtue’s hill,		To have conceived of God, or that salute,	
	Discountenance her despised, and put to rout		‘Hail, highly favoured, among women blest!’	
	All her array, her female pride deject,		While I to sorrows am no less advanced,	F32
220	Or turn to reverent awe! For Beauty stands		And fears as eminent above the lot	70
F40	In the admiration only of weak minds		Of other women, by the birth I bore:	
	Led captive; cease to admire, and all her plumes		In such a season born, when scarce a shed	
	Fall flat, and shrink into a trivial toy,		Could be obtained to shelter him or me	
	At every sudden slighting quite abashed.		From the bleak air? A stable was our warmth,	
225	Therefore with manlier objects we must try		A manger his; yet soon enforced to fly	75
L2[O]	His constancy — with such as have more show		Thence into Egypt, till the murderous king	L2[O]
A	Of worth, of honour, glory, and popular praise		Were dead, who sought his life, and, missing, filled	A
	(Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wrecked);		With infant blood the streets of Bethlehem.	
	Or that which only seems to satisfy		From Egypt home returned, in Nazareth	
230	Lawful desires of nature, not beyond.		Hath been our dwelling many years; his life	80
	And now I know he hungers, where no food		Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,	
	Is to be found, in the wide Wilderness:	3 (2c)	Little suspicious to any king. But now,	
	The rest commit to me; I shall let pass		Full grown to man, acknowledged, as I hear,	
	No advantage, and his strength as oft assay.”		By John the Baptist, and in public shown,	
235	He ceased, and heard their grant in loud acclaim;		Son owned from Heaven by his Father’s voice,	85
♦	Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band		I looked for some great change. To honour? no;	
	Of Spirits likest to himself in guile,		But trouble, as old Simeon plain foretold,	
	To be at hand and at his beck appear,		That to the fall and rising he should be	F33
	If cause were to unfold some active scene	3	Of many in Israel, and to a sign	
240 F41	Of various persons, each to know his part;		Spoken against — that through my very soul	90
	Then to the desert takes with these his flight,		A sword shall pierce. This is my favoured lot,	
	Where still, from shade to shade, the Son of God,		My exaltation to afflictions high!	
	After forty days’ fasting, had remained,		Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest!	
	Now hungering first, and to himself thus said: —		I will not argue that, nor will repine.	
245	“Where will this end? Four times ten days I have passed		But where delays he now? Some great intent	95
	Wandering this woody maze, and human food		Conceals him. When twelve years he scarce had seen,	
	Nor tasted, nor had appetite. That fast		I lost him, but so found as well I saw	
	To virtue I impute not, or count part		He could not lose himself, but went about	
	Of what I suffer here. If nature need not,	11	His Father’s business. What he meant I mused —	
2.250	Or God support nature without repast,	135	Since understand; much more his absence now	2.100

	Thus long to some great purpose he obscures. But I to wait with patience am inured; My heart hath been a storehouse long of things And sayings laid up, portending strange events."	130 (96c) 10 (7c)	The sensualest, and, after Asmodai, The fleshliest Incubus, and thus advised: — "Set women in his eye and in his walk, Among daughters of men the fairest found. Many are in each region passing fair As the noon sky, more like to goddesses Than mortal creatures, graceful and discreet, Expert in amorous arts, enchanting tongues Persuasive, virgin majesty with mild And sweet allayed, yet terrible to approach, Skilled to retire, and in retiring draw Hearts after them tangled in amorous nets. Such object hath the power to soften and tame Severest temper, smooth the rugged'st brow, Enerve, and with voluptuous hope dissolve, Draw out with credulous desire, and lead At will the manliest, resolute breast, As the magnetic hardest iron draws. Women, when nothing else, beguiled the heart Of wisest Solomon, and made him build, And made him bow, to the gods of his wives." To whom quick answer Satan thus returned: — "Belial, in much uneven scale thou weigh'st All others by thyself. Because of old Thou thyself doat'st on womankind, admiring Their shape, their colour, and attractive grace, None are, thou think'st, but taken with such toys. Before the Flood, thou, with thy lusty crew, False titled Sons of God, roaming the Earth, Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men, And coupled with them, and begot a race. Have we not seen, or by relation heard, In courts and regal chambers how thou lurk'st, In wood or grove, by mossy fountain-side, In valley or green meadow, to waylay Some beauty rare, Calisto, Clymene, Daphne, or Semele, Antiopa, Or Amymone, Syrinx, many more Too long — then lay'st thy scapes on names adored, Apollo, Neptune, Jupiter, or Pan, Satyr, or Faun, or Silvan? But these haunts Delight not all. Among the sons of men How many have with a smile made small account Of beauty and her lures, easily scorned All her assaults, on worthier things intent! Remember that Pelleian conqueror, A youth, how all the beauties of the East He slightly viewed, and slightly overpassed; How he surnamed of Africa dismissed, In his prime youth, the fair Iberian maid.	155 160 165 170 175 180 185 190 195
105	Thus Mary, pondering oft, and oft to mind Recalling what remarkably had passed			
F34	Since first her Salutation heard, with thoughts Meekly composed awaited the fulfilling: The while her Son, tracing the desert wild, Sole, but with holiest meditations fed, Into himself descended, and at once All his great work to come before him set — How to begin, how to accomplish best His end of being on Earth, and mission high.			
110	For Satan, with sly preface to return, Had left him vacant, and with speed was gone Up to the middle region of thick air, Where all his Potentates in council sate. There, without sign of boast, or sign of joy, Solicitous and blank, he thus began: — "Princes, Heaven's ancient Sons, Ethereal Thrones — Demonian Spirits now, from the element Each of his reign allotted rightlier called Powers of Fire, Air, Water, and Earth beneath (So may we hold our place and these mild seats Without new trouble!) — such an enemy Is risen to invade us, who no less Threatens than our expulsion down to Hell. I, as I undertook, and with the vote Consenting in full frequency was empowered, Have found him, viewed him, tasted him; but find Far other labour to be undergone Than when I dealt with Adam, first of men, Though Adam by his wife's allurements fell, However to this Man inferior far — If he be Man by mother's side, at least With more than human gifts from Heaven adorned, Perfections absolute, graces divine, And amplitude of mind to greatest deeds. Therefore I am returned, lest confidence Of my success with Eve in Paradise Deceive ye to persuasion over-sure Of like succeeding here. I summon all Rather to be in readiness with hand Or counsel to assist, lest I, who erst Thought none my equal, now be overmatched." So spake the old Serpent, doubting, and from all With clamour was assured their utmost aid At his command; when from amidst them rose Belial, the dissolutest Spirit that fell,			
115				
120				
125				
L2[I] F35				L2[I]
A				A
130		4 (3C)		
^12K				F38
135				185
♦				
140		4		190
F36				195
Milton				Milton
Paradise				Paradise
Regained				Regained
2.150		12 136		2.200

Milton Paradise Regained	On Aaron's breast, or tongue of Seers old	131	That fragrant smell diffused, in order stood	Milton
	Infalible; or, wert thou sought to deeds	11	Tall stripling youths rich-clad, of fairer hue	Paradise
20	That might require the array of war, thy skill		Than Ganymed or Hylas; distant more,	Regained
	Of conduct would be such that all the world		Under the trees now tripped, now solemn stood,	F47
25	Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist		Nymphs of Diana's train, and Naiades	355
	In battle, though against thy few in arms.		With fruits and flowers from Amalthea's horn,	
30	These godlike virtues wherefore dost thou hide?		And ladies of the Hesperides, that seemed	
	Affecting private life, or more obscure		Fairer than feigned of old, or fabled since	
F56	In savage wilderness, wherefore deprive		Of faery damsels met in forest wide	
	All Earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself		By knights of Logres, or of Lyones,	360
35	The fame and glory — glory, the reward		Lancelot, or Pelleas, or Pellenore.	
	That sole excites to high attempts the flame		And all the while harmonious airs were heard	
F56	Of most erected spirits, most tempered pure		Of chiming strings or charming pipes; and winds	
	Ethereal, who all pleasures else despise,		Of gentlest gale Arabian odours fanned	
40	All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,		From their soft wings, and Flora's earliest smells.	365
	And dignities and powers, all but the highest?		Such was the splendour; and the Tempter now	
L1[O]	Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe. The son		His invitation earnestly renewed: —	
	Of Macedonian Philip had ere these		“What doubts the Son of God to sit and eat?	
B	Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus held		These are not fruits forbidden; no interdict	
	At his dispose; young Scipio had brought down		Defends the touching of these viands pure;	370
45	The Carthaginian pride; young Pompey quelled		Their taste no knowledge works, at least of evil,	
	The Pontic king, and in triumph had rode.		But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,	
♦	Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,		Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.	F48
	Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.		All these are Spirits of air, and woods, and springs,	
L1[O]	Great Julius, whom now all the world admires,		Thy gentle ministers, who come to pay	375
	The more he grew in years, the more inflamed		Thee homage, and acknowledge thee their Lord.	L1[O]
B	With glory, wept that he had lived so long		What doubt'st thou, Son of God? Sit down and eat.”	B
	Inglorious. But thou yet art not too late.”		To whom thus Jesus temperately replied:	
45	To whom our Saviour calmly thus replied: —		“Said'st thou not that to all things I had right?	
	“Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth		And who withholds my power that right to use?	380
5	For empire's sake, nor empire to affect		Shall I receive by gift what of my own,	
	For glory's sake, by all thy argument.		When and where likes me best, I can command?	
5	For what is glory but the blaze of fame ,		I can at will, doubt not, as soon as thou,	
	The people's praise, if always praise unmixed?		Command a table in this wilderness,	
3.50 F57	And what the people but a herd confused ,		And call swift flights of Angels ministrant,	385
	A miscellaneous rabble, who extol		Arrayed in glory, on my cup to attend:	
55	Things vulgar, and, well weighed, scarce worth the praise?		Why shouldst thou, then, obtrude this diligence	
	They praise and they admire they know not what,		In vain, where no acceptance it can find?	
60	And know not whom, but as one leads the other;		And with my hunger what hast thou to do?	
	And what delight to be by such extolled,		Thy pompous delicacies I contemn,	390
60	To live upon their tongues, and be their talk?		And count thy specious gifts no gifts, but guiles.”	
	Of whom to be dispraised were no small praise —		To whom thus answered Satan, malecontent: —	F49
3.64	His lot who dares be singularly good.		“That I have also power to give thou seest;	
	The intelligent among them and the wise		If of that power I bring thee voluntary	
13	Are few, and glory scarce of few is raised.		What I might have bestowed on whom I pleased,	395
	This is true glory and renown — when God,		And rather opportunely in this place	
137	Looking on the Earth, with approbation marks		Chose to impart to thy apparent need,	
	The just man, and divulges him through Heaven		Why shouldst thou not accept it? But I see	
137	To all his Angels, who with true applause		What I can do or offer is suspect.	
	Recount his praises. Thus he did to Job,		Of these things others quickly will dispose,	2.400
When, to extend his fame through Heaven and Earth,				

	Whose pains have earned the far-fet spoil.” With that	132	May also in this poverty as soon	
	Both table and provision vanished quite,	12	Accomplish what they did, perhaps and more?	
	With sound of harpies’ wings and talons heard;		Extol not riches, then, the toil of fools,	
	Only the importune Tempter still remained,		The wise man’s cumbrance, if not snare; more apt	
405	And with these words his temptation pursued: —		To slacken virtue and abate her edge	455
	“By hunger, that each other creature tames,		Than prompt her to do aught may merit praise.	
	Thou art not to be harmed, therefore not moved;		What if with like aversion I reject	
	Thy temperance, invincible besides,		Riches and realms! Yet not for that a crown,	
	For no allurement yields to appetite;		Golden in shew, is but a wreath of thorns,	
410	And all thy heart is set on high designs,		Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights,	460
F50	High actions. But wherewith to be achieved?		To him who wears the regal diadem,	
	Great acts require great means of enterprise;		When on his shoulders each man’s burden lies;	
	Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,		For therein stands the office of a king,	
	A carpenter thy father known, thyself		His honour, virtue, merit, and chief praise,	
415	Bred up in poverty and straits at home,		That for the public all this weight he bears.	465
	Lost in a desert here and hunger-bit.		Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules	
	Which way, or from what hope, dost thou aspire		Passions, desires, and fears, is more a king —	
	To greatness? whence authority deriv’st?		Which every wise and virtuous man attains;	F53
	What followers, what retinue canst thou gain,		And who attains not, ill aspires to rule	
420	Or at thy heels the dizzy multitude,		Cities of men, or headstrong multitudes,	470
	Longer than thou canst feed them on thy cost?		Subject himself to anarchy within,	
	Money brings honour, friends, conquest, and realms.		Or lawless passions in him, which he serves.	
	What raised Antipater the Edomite,		But to guide nations in the way of truth	
	And his son Herod placed on Judah’s throne,		By saving doctrine, and from error lead	
425	Thy throne, but gold, that got him puissant friends?		To know, and, knowing, worship God aright,	475
L1[I]	Therefore, if at great things thou wouldst arrive,		Is yet more kingly. This attracts the soul,	L1[I]
B	Get riches first, get wealth, and treasure heap —		Governs the inner man, the nobler part;	B
	Not difficult, if thou hearken to me.		That other o’er the body only reigns,	
	Riches are mine, fortune is in my hand;		And oft by force — which to a generous mind	
F51 430	They whom I favour thrive in wealth amain,		So reigning can be no sincere delight.	480
	While virtue, valour, wisdom, sit in want.”		Besides, to give a kingdom hath been thought	
	To whom thus Jesus patiently replied:	6	Greater and nobler done, and to lay down	
	“Yet wealth without these three is impotent		Far more magnanimous, than to assume.	
	To gain dominion, or to keep it gained —		Riches are needless, then, both for themselves,	
435	Witness those ancient empires of the earth,		And for thy reason why they should be sought —	
♦	In highth of all their flowing wealth dissolved;		To gain a sceptre, ofttest better missed.”	2.486
	But men endued with these have oft attained,		SO spake the Son of God; and Satan stood	F54 3.1
	In lowest poverty, to highest deeds —		A while as mute, confounded what to say,	
	Gideon, and Jephtha, and the shepherd lad	6	What to reply, confuted and convinced	
440	Whose offspring on the throne of Judah sat		Of his weak arguing and fallacious drift;	
	So many ages, and shall yet regain		At length, collecting all his serpent wiles,	5
	That seat, and reign in Israel without end.		With soothing words renewed, him thus accosts: —	
	Among the Heathen (for throughout the world		“I see thou know’st what is of use to know,	
	To me is not unknown what hath been done		What best to say canst say, to do canst do;	
445	Worthy of memorial) canst thou not remember		Thy actions to thy words accord; thy words	
Milton	Quintius, Fabricius, Curius, Regulus? —		To thy large heart give utterance due; thy heart	10 Milton
Paradise	For I esteem those names of men so poor,		Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.	Paradise
Regained	Who could do mighty things, and could contemn		Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult, F55	Regained
F52	Riches, though offered from the hand of Kings.	14	Thy counsel would be as the oracle	
2.450	And what in me seems wanting but that I	138	Urim and Thummim, those oraculous gems	3.14

Against the Scythian, whose incursions wild
 Have wasted Sogdiana; to her aid
 He marches now in haste. See, though from far,
 His thousands, in what martial equipage
 They issue forth, steel bows and shafts their arms,
 Of equal dread in flight or in pursuit —
 All horsemen, in which fight they most excel;
 See how in warlike muster they appear,
 In rhombs, and wedges, and half-moons, and wings.”
 He looked, and saw what numbers numberless
 The city gates outpoured, light-armed troops
 In coats of mail and military pride.
 In mail their horses clad, yet fleet and strong,
 Prauncing their riders bore, the flower and choice
 Of many provinces from bound to bound —
 From Arachosia, from Candaor east,
 And Margiana, to the Hyrcanian cliffs
 Of Caucasus, and dark Iberian dales;
 From Atropatia, and the neighbouring plains
 Of Adiabene, Media, and the south
 Of Susiana, to Balsara’s haven.
 He saw them in their forms of battle ranged,
 How quick they wheeled, and flying behind them shot
 Sharp sleet of arrowy showers against the face
 Of their pursuers, and overcame by flight;
 The field all iron cast a gleaming brown.
 Nor wanted clouds of foot, nor, on each horn,
 Cuirassiers all in steel for standing fight,
 Chariots, or elephants indorsed with towers
 Of archers; nor of labouring pioneers
 A multitude, with spades and axes armed,
 To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,
 Or where plain was raise hill, or overlay
 With bridges rivers proud, **as with a yoke:**
 Mules after these, camels and dromedaries,
 And waggon fraught with utensils of war.
 Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,
 When Agrican, with all his northern powers,
 Besieged Albracea, as romances tell,
 The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win
 The fairest of her sex, Angelica,
 His daughter, sought by many prowrest knights,
 Both Paynim and the peers of Charlemain.
 Such and so numerous was their chivalry;
 At sight whereof the Fiend yet more presumed,
 And to our Saviour thus his words renewed: —
 “That thou may’st know I seek not to engage
 Thy virtue, and not every way secure
 On no slight grounds thy safety, hear and mark
 To what end I have brought thee hither, and show

133

13

F#A top row of page # in First Edition
 (1671) [Link](#).

♦ row of last line of this edition

MILTON

PARADISE REGAINED

BOOK 3

PREVIEW
Book 4



.ORG

DIGITAL CLASSICS

A 2L 1 - 350
B 1L 351 - 443

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
 A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
 WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1671)
 copy text: D. Masson (1890)
 typeface: Kings Caslon
 by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
 LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
 is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](#) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 443 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
 In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
 Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
 Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:

139 to 144

15

139

F54	SO spake the Son of God; and Satan stood	134 (97C)	With that (such power was given him then), he took	
	A while as mute, confounded what to say,	14 (8C)	The Son of God up to a mountain high.	
	What to reply, confuted and convinced		It was a mountain at whose verdant feet	
	Of his weak arguing and fallacious drift;		A spacious plain outstretched in circuit wide	
5	At length, collecting all his serpent wiles,		Lay pleasant; from his side two rivers flowed,	255
	With soothing words renewed, him thus accosts: —		The one winding, the other straight, and left between	
	“I see thou know’st what is of use to know,		Fair champaign, with less rivers interveined,	
	What best to say canst say, to do canst do;		Then meeting joined their tribute to the sea.	
	Thy actions to thy words accord; thy words		Fertile of corn the glebe, of oil, and wine;	F68
10	To thy large heart give utterance due; thy heart		With herds the pasture thronged, with flocks the hills;	260
	Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.		Huge cities and high-towered, that well might seem	
F55	Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult,		The seats of mightiest monarchs; and so large	
	Thy counsel would be as the oracle		The prospect was that here and there was room	
	Urim and Thummim, those oraculous gems		For barren desert, fountainless and dry.	
15	On Aaron’s breast, or tongue of Seers old		To this high mountain-top the Tempter brought	265
	Infallible; or, wert thou sought to deeds		Our Saviour, and new train of words began: —	
	That might require the array of war, thy skill		“Well have we speeded, and o’er hill and dale,	
	Of conduct would be such that all the world		Forest, and field, and flood, temples and towers,	
	Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist		Cut shorter many a league. Here thou behold’st	
20	In battle, though against thy few in arms.		Assyria, and her empire’s ancient bounds,	270
	These godlike virtues wherefore dost thou hide?		Araxes and the Caspian lake; thence on	
	Affecting private life, or more obscure		As far as Indus east, Euphrates west,	
	In savage wilderness, wherefore deprive		And oft beyond; to south the Persian bay,	
	All Earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself		And, inaccessible, the Arabian drouth:	
25	The fame and glory — glory, the reward		Here, Nineveh, of length within her wall	275
L1[I]	That sole excites to high attempts the flame		Several days’ journey, built by Ninus old,	L1[I]
A	Of most erected spirits, most tempered pure		Of that first golden monarchy the seat,	A
	Ethereal, who all pleasures else despise,		And seat of Salmanassar, whose success	F69
	All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,		Israel in long captivity still mourns;	
30	And dignities and powers, all but the highest?		There Babylon, the wonder of all tongues,	280
F56	Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe. The son		As ancient, but rebuilt by him who twice	
	Of Macedonian Philip had ere these	2 (1C)	Judah and all thy father David’s house	
	Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus held		Led captive, and Jerusalem laid waste,	
	At his dispose; young Scipio had brought down		Till Cyrus set them free; Persepolis,	
35	The Carthaginian pride; young Pompey quelled		His city, there thou seest, and Bactra there;	285
	The Pontic king, and in triumph had rode.		Ecbatana her structure vast there shows,	
	Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,		And Hecatompylos her hunderd gates;	
	Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.		There Susa by Choaspes, amber stream,	
	Great Julius, whom now all the world admires,	2	The drink of none but kings; of later fame,	
40	The more he grew in years, the more inflamed		Built by Emathian or by Parthian hands,	290
	With glory, wept that he had lived so long		The great Seleucia, Nisibis, and there	
	Ingloriorious. But thou yet art not too late.”		Artaxata, Teredon, Ctesiphon,	
♦	To whom our Saviour calmly thus replied: —		Turning with easy eye, thou may’st behold.	
	“Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth		All these the Parthian (now some ages past	
45	For empire’s sake, nor empire to affect		By great Arsaces led, who founded first	295
Milton	For glory’s sake, by all thy argument.		That empire) under his dominion holds,	Milton
Paradise	For what is glory but the blaze of fame,		From the luxurious kings of Antioch won.	F70
Regained	The people’s praise, if always praise unmixed?		And just in time thou com’st to have a view	Paradise
	And what the people but a herd confused,	16	Of his great power; for now the Parthian king	Regained
3.50 F57	A miscellaneous rabble, who extol	140	In Ctesiphon hath gathered all his host	3.300

Milton	Know'st thou not that my rising is thy fall,	135 (98C)	Things vulgar, and, well weighed, scarce worth the praise?	
F65	And my promotion will be thy destruction?"	15 (9C)	They praise and they admire they know not what,	Milton
Paradise	To whom the Tempter, inly racked, replied: —		And know not whom, but as one leads the other;	Paradise
Regained	"Let that come when it comes. All hope is lost		And what delight to be by such extolled,	Regained
205	Of my reception into grace; what worse?		To live upon their tongues, and be their talk?	55
	For where no hope is left is left no fear.		Of whom to be dispraised were no small praise —	
	If there be worse, the expectation more		His lot who dares be singularly good.	
	Of worse torments me than the feeling can.		The intelligent among them and the wise	
	I would be at the worst; worst is my port,		Are few, and glory scarce of few is raised.	
210	My harbour, and my ultimate repose,		This is true glory and renown — when God,	60
	The end I would attain, my final good.		Looking on the Earth, with approbation marks	
	My error was my error, and my crime		The just man, and divulges him through Heaven	
	My crime; whatever, for itself condemned,		To all his Angels, who with true applause	
	And will alike be punished, whether thou		Recount his praises. Thus he did to Job,	
215	Reign or reign not — though to that gentle brow		When, to extend his fame through Heaven and Earth,	65
	Willingly I could fly, and hope thy reign,		As thou to thy reproach may'st well remember,	
	From that placid aspect and meek regard,		He asked thee, 'Hast thou seen my servant Job?'	
	Rather than aggravate my evil state,		Famous he was in Heaven; on Earth less known,	
	Would stand between me and thy Father's ire		Where glory is false glory, attributed	F58
220	(Whose ire I dread more than the fire of Hell)		To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame.	70
F66	A shelter and a kind of shading cool		They err who count it glorious to subdue	
	Interposition, as a summer's cloud.		By conquest far and wide, to overrun	
	If I, then, to the worst that can be haste,		Large countries, and in field great battles win,	
	Why move thy feet so slow to what is best?		Great cities by assault. What do these worthies	
225	Happiest, both to thyself and all the world,		But rob and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave	75
L2[O]	That thou, who worthiest art, shouldst be their king!		Peaceable nations, neighbouring or remote,	L2[O]
A	Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detained		Made captive, yet deserving freedom more	A
	Of the enterprise so hazardous and high!		Than those their conquerors, who leave behind	
	No wonder; for, though in thee be united		Nothing but ruin wheresoe'er they rove,	
230	What of perfection can in Man be found,		And all the flourishing works of peace destroy;	80
	Or human nature can receive, consider		Then swell with pride, and must be titled Gods,	
	Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent	3 (2C)	Great benefactors of mankind, Deliverers,	
	At home, scarce viewed the Galilean towns,		Worshipped with temple, priest, and sacrifice?	^^1K
	And once a year Jerusalem few days'		One is the son of Jove, of Mars the other;	
235	Short sojourn; and what thence couldst thou observe?		Till conqueror Death discover them scarce men,	85
	The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,		Rolling in brutish vices, and deformed,	
	Empires, and monarchs, and their radiant courts —		Violent or shameful death their due reward.	
	Best school of best experience, quickest in sight		But, if there be in glory aught of good;	F59
	In all things that to greatest actions lead.	3	It may be means far different be attained,	
240 F67	The wisest, unexperienced, will be ever		Without ambition, war, or violence —	90
	Timorous, and loth, with novice modesty		By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,	
	(As he who, seeking asses, found a kingdom)		By patience, temperance. I mention still	
♦	Irresolute, unhardy, unadventurous.		Him whom thy wrongs, with saintly patience borne,	
	But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit		Made famous in a land and times obscure;	
245	Those rudiments, and see before thine eyes		Who names not now with honour patient Job?	95
	The monarchies of the Earth, their pomp and state —		Poor Socrates, (who next more memorable?)	
	Sufficient introduction to inform		By what he taught and suffered for so doing,	
	Thee, of thyself so apt, in regal arts,		For truth's sake suffering death unjust, lives now	
	And regal mysteries; that thou may'st know	17	Equal in fame to proudest conquerors.	
3.250	How best their opposition to withstand."	141	Yet, if for fame and glory aught be done,	3.100

	Aught suffered — if young African for fame	136 (99C)	Worth or not worth the seeking, let it pass.	
	His wasted country freed from Punic rage —	16 (10C)	But to a Kingdom thou art born — ordained	
	The deed becomes unpraised, the man at least,		To sit upon thy father David's throne,	
	And loses, though but verbal, his reward.		By mother's side thy father, though thy right	
105	Shall I seek glory, then, as vain men seek,		Be now in powerful hands, that will not part	155
	Oft not deserved? I seek not mine, but His		Easily from possession won with arms.	
F60	Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am."		Judaea now and all the Promised Land,	
	To whom the Tempter, murmuring, thus replied:		Reduced a province under Roman yoke,	
	"Think not so slight of glory, therein least		Obeys Tiberius, nor is always ruled	
110	Resembling thy great Father. He seeks glory,		With temperate sway: oft have they violated	160
	And for his glory all things made, all things		The Temple, oft the Law, with foul affronts,	
	Orders and governs; nor content in Heaven,		Abominations rather, as did once	
	By all his Angels glorified, requires		Antiochus. And think'st thou to regain	
	Glory from men, from all men, good or bad,		Thy right by sitting still, or thus retiring?	F63
115	Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption.		So did not Machabeus. He indeed	165
	Above all sacrifice, or hallowed gift,		Retired unto the Desert, but with arms;	
	Glory he requires, and glory he receives,		And o'er a mighty king so oft prevailed	
	Promiscuous from all nations, Jew, or Greek,		That by strong hand his family obtained,	
	Or Barbarous, nor exception hath declared;		Though priests, the crown, and David's throne usurped,	
120	From us, his foes pronounced, glory he exacts."		With Modin and her suburbs once content.	170
	To whom our Saviour fervently replied: —		If kingdom move thee not, let move thee zeal	
	"And reason; since his Word all things produced,		And duty — zeal and duty are not slow,	
	Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,		But on Occasion's forelock watchful wait:	
	But to show forth his goodness, and impart		They themselves rather are occasion best —	
125	His good communicable to every soul		Zeal of thy Father's house, duty to free	175
L2[I] F61	Freely; of whom what could he less expect		Thy country from her heathen servitude.	L2[I]
A	Than glory and benediction — that is, thanks —		So shalt thou best fulfil, best verify,	A
	The slightest, easiest, readiest recompense		The Prophets old, who sung thy endless reign —	
	From them who could return him nothing else,		The happier reign the sooner it begins.	
130	And, not returning that, would likeliest render		Rein then; what canst thou better do the while?"	180
	Contempt instead, dishonour, obloquy?		To whom our Saviour answer thus returned:	
	Hard recompense, unsuitable return	4 (3C)	"All things are best fulfilled in their due time;	
	For so much good, so much beneficence!		And time there is for all things, Truth hath said.	F64
	But why should man seek glory, who of his own		If of my reign Prophetic Writ hath told	
135	Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs		That it shall never end, so, when begin	185
	But condemnation, ignominy, and shame —		The Father in his purpose hath decreed —	
	Who, for so many benefits received,		He in whose hand all times and seasons roll.	
	Turned recreant to God, ingrate and false,		What if he hath decreed that I shall first	
	And so of all true good himself despoiled;	4	Be tried in humble state, and things adverse,	
140	Yet, sacrilegious, to himself would take		By tribulations, injuries, insults,	190
	That which to God alone of right belongs?		Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,	
	Yet so much bounty is in God, such grace,		Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting	
♦	That who advances his glory, not their own,		Without distrust or doubt, that He may know	
	Them he himself to glory will advance."		What I can suffer, how obey? Who best	
F62	So spake the Son of God; and here again		Can suffer best can do, best reign who first	195
Milton	Satan had not to answer, but stood struck		Well hath obeyed — just trial ere I merit	Milton
Paradise	With guilt of his own sin — for he himself,		My exaltation without change or end.	Paradise
Regained	Insatiable of glory, had lost all;		But what concerns it thee when I begin	Regained
	Yet of another plea bethought him soon: —	18	My everlasting Kingdom? Why art thou	
3.150	"Of glory, as thou wilt," said he, "so deem;	142	Solicitous? What moves thy inquisition?	3.200

	Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs	137	All this fair sight. Thy kingdom, though foretold	
Milton	Carved work, the hand of famed artificers	17	By Prophet or by Angel, unless thou	Milton
Paradise	In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold.		Endeavour, as thy father David did,	Paradise
Regained	Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see		Thou never shalt obtain: prediction still	F73 Regained
	What conflux issuing forth, or entering in:		In all things, and all men, supposes means;	355
	Praetors, proconsuls to their provinces		Without means used, what it predicts revokes.	
	Hasting, or on return, in robes of state;		But say thou wert possessed of David's throne	
65	Lictors and rods, the ensigns of their power;		By free consent of all, none opposite,	
	Legions and cohorts, turms of horse and wings;		Samaritan or Jew; how couldst thou hope	
	Or embassies from regions far remote,		Long to enjoy it quiet and secure	360
	In various habits, on the Appian road,		Between two such enclosing enemies,	
F82	Or on the Aemilian — some from farthest south,		Roman and Parthian? Therefore one of these	
70	Syene, and where the shadow both way falls,		Thou must make sure thy own: the Parthian first,	
	Meroe, Nilotic isle, and, more to west,		By my advice, as nearer, and of late	
	The realm of Bocchus to the Blackmoor sea;		Found able by invasion to annoy	365
	From the Asian kings (and Parthian among these),		Thy country, and captive lead away her kings,	
	From India and the Golden Chersoness,		Antigonus and old Hyrcanus, bound,	
75	And utmost Indian isle Taprobane,		Maugre the Roman. It shall be my task	
	Dusk faces with white silken turbants wreathed;		To render thee the Parthian at dispose,	
	From Gallia, Gades, and the British west;		Choose which thou wilt, by conquest or by league.	370
	Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians north		By him thou shalt regain, without him not,	
	Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.		That which alone can truly reinstall thee	
80	All nations now to Rome obedience pay —		In David's royal seat, his true successor —	F74
	To Rome's great Emperor, whose wide domain,		Deliverance of thy brethren, those Ten Tribes	
	In ample territory, wealth and power,		Whose offspring in his territory yet serve	375
L1[O]	Civility of manners, arts and arms,		In Habor, and among the Medes dispersed:	L1[O]
B	And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer		The sons of Jacob, two of Joseph, lost	B
	Before the Parthian. These two thrones except,		Thus long from Israel, serving, as of old	
	The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,		Their fathers in the land of Egypt served,	
	Shared among petty kings too far removed;		This offer sets before thee to deliver.	380
F83	These having shewn thee, I have shewn thee all		These if from servitude thou shalt restore	
	The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.	5	To their inheritance, then, nor till then,	
90	This Emperor hath no son, and now is old,		Thou on the throne of David in full glory,	
	Old and lascivious, and from Rome retired		From Egypt to Euphrates and beyond,	
	To Capreae, an island small but strong		Shalt reign, and Rome or Caesar not need fear.”	385
	On the Campanian shore, with purpose there		To whom our Saviour answered thus, unmoved:	
	His horrid lusts in private to enjoy;		“Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm	
95	Committing to a wicked favourite		And fragile arms, much instrument of war,	
	All public cares, and yet of him suspicious;	5	Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,	
	Hated of all, and hating. With what ease,		Before mine eyes thou hast set, and in my ear	390
	Endued with regal virtues as thou art,		Vented much policy, and projects deep	
	Appearing, and beginning noble deeds,		Of enemies, of aids, battles, and leagues,	F75
4.100	Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne,		Plausible to the world, to me worth naught.	
	Now made a sty, and, in his place ascending,		Means I must use, thou say'st; prediction else	
	A victor-people free from servile yoke!		Will unpredict, and fail me of the throne!	395
	And with my help thou may'st; to me the power		My time, I told thee (and that time for thee	
	Is given, and by that right I give it thee.		Were better farthest off), is not yet come.	
105	Aim, therefore, at no less than all the world;		When that comes, think not thou to find me slack	
	Aim at the highest; without the highest attained,	19	On my part aught endeavouring, or to need	
4.107 F84	Will be for thee no sitting, or not long,	143	Thy politic maxims, or that cumbersome	3.400
	On David's throne, be prophesied what will.”			

	Luggage of war there shown me — argument	138	And rash, beforehand had no better weighed	
	Of human weakness rather than of strength.	18	The strength he was to cope with, or his own.	
	My brethren, as thou call'st them, those Ten Tribes,		But — as a man who had been matchless held	10
	I must deliver, if I mean to reign		In cunning, over-reached where least he thought,	F79
405	David's true heir, and his full sceptre sway		To salve his credit, and for very spite,	
	To just extent over all Israel's sons!		Still will be tempting him who foils him still,	15
	But whence to thee this zeal? Where was it then		And never cease, though to his shame the more;	
	For Israel, or for David, or his throne,		Or as a swarm of flies in vintage-time,	
	When thou stood'st up his tempter to the pride		About the wine-press where sweet must is poured,	
410	Of numbering Israel — which cost the lives		Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound;	
F76	of threescore and ten thousand Israelites		Or surging waves against a solid rock,	
	By three days' pestilence? Such was thy zeal		Though all to shivers dashed, the assault renew,	20
	To Israel then, the same that now to me.		(Vain battery!) and in froth or bubbles end —	
	As for those captive tribes, themselves were they		So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse	
415	Who wrought their own captivity, fell off		Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,	
	From God to worship calves, the deities		Yet gives not o'er, though desperate of success,	
	Of Egypt, Baal next and Ashtaroth,		And his vain importunity pursues.	25
	And all the idolatries of heathen round,		He brought our Saviour to the western side	
	Besides their other worse than heathenish crimes;		Of that high mountain, whence he might behold	
420	Nor in the land of their captivity		Another plain, long, but in breadth not wide,	
	Humbled themselves, or penitent besought		Washed by the southern sea, and on the north	
	The God of their forefathers, but so died		To equal length backed with a ridge of hills	
	Impenitent, and left a race behind		That screened the fruits of the earth and seats of men	30
	Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce		From cold Septentrion blasts; thence in the midst	F80
425	From Gentiles, but by circumcision vain,		Divided by a river, off whose banks	
L1[I]	And God with idols in their worship joined.		On each side an imperial city stood,	L1[I]
B	Should I of these the liberty regard,		With towers and temples proudly elevate	B
	Who, freed, as to their ancient patrimony,		On seven small hills, with palaces adorned,	
	Unhumbled, unrepentant, unreformed,		Porches and theatres, baths, aqueducts,	
430 F77	Headlong would follow, and to their gods perhaps		Statues and trophies, and triumphal arcs,	
	Of Bethel and of Dan? No; let them serve		Gardens and groves, presented to his eyes	
	Their enemies who serve idols with God.	6	Above the highth of mountains interposed —	
	Yet He at length, time to himself best known,		By what strange parallax, or optic skill	40
	Remembering Abraham, by some wondrous call		Of vision, multiplied through air, or glass	
445	May bring them back, repentant and sincere,		Of telescope, were curious to enquire.	
	And at their passing cleave the Assyrian flood,		And now the Tempter thus his silence broke: —	
	While to their native land with joy they haste,		“The city which thou seest no other deem	
	As the Red Sea and Jordan once he cleft,		Than great and glorious Rome, Queen of the Earth	45
	When to the Promised Land their fathers passed.	6	So far renowned, and with the spoils enriched	
440	To his due time and providence I leave them.”		Of nations. There the Capitol thou seest,	
	So spake Israel's true King, and to the Fiend		Above the rest lifting his stately head	
	Made answer meet, that made void all his wiles.		On the Tarpeian rock, her citadel	
3.443 ♦	So fares it when with truth falsehood contends.		Impregnable; and there Mount Palatine,	F81 4.50
4.1 F78	P ERPLEXED and troubled at his bad success		The imperial palace, compass huge, and high	
	The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,		The structure, skill of noblest architects,	
	Discovered in his fraud, thrown from his hope		With gilded battlements, conspicuous far,	
~12K	So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric		Turrets, and terraces, and glittering spires.	Milton
Paradise	That sleeked his tongue, and won so much on Eve,		Many a fair edifice besides, more like	Paradise
Regained	So little here, nay lost. But Eve was Eve;	20	Houses of gods — so well I have disposed	Regained
4.7	This far his over-match, who, self-deceived	144	My aery microscope — thou may'st behold,	4.57

For Son of God to me is yet in doubt.
Milton Of the Messiah I have heard foretold
Paradise By all the Prophets; of thy birth, at length
Regained Announced by Gabriel, with the first I knew,
505 And of the angelic song in Bethlehem field,
F105 On thy birth-night, that sung thee Saviour born.
From that time seldom have I ceased to eye
Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,
Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred;
510 Till, at the ford of Jordan, whither all
Flocked to the Baptist, I among the rest
(Though not to be baptized), by voice from Heaven
Heard thee pronounced the Son of God beloved.
Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view
515 And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn
In what degree or meaning thou art called
The Son of God, which bears no single sense.
The Son of God I also am, or was;
And, if I was, I am; relation stands:
520 All men are Sons of God; yet thee I thought
In some respect far higher so declared.
Therefore I watched thy footsteps from that hour,
And followed thee still on to this waste wild,
Where, by all best conjectures, I collect
F106 Thou art to be my fatal enemy.
L1[O] Good reason, then, if I beforehand seek
A To understand my adversary, who
And what he is; his wisdom, power, intent;
By parle or composition, truce or league,
530 To win him, or win from him what I can.
And opportunity I here have had
To try thee, sift thee, and confess have found thee
Proof against all temptation, **as a rock**
Of adamant and as a centre, firm
535 To the utmost of mere man both wise and good,
Not more; for honours, riches, kingdoms, glory,
Have been before contemned, and may again.
Therefore, to know what more thou art than man,
♦ Worth naming the Son of God by voice from Heaven,
540 Another method I must now begin.”
So saying, he caught him up, and, without wing
Of hippogrif, bore through the air sublime,
Over the wilderness and o’er the plain,
F107 Till underneath them fair Jerusalem,
545 The Holy City, lifted high her towers,
And higher yet the glorious Temple reared
Her pile, far off appearing **like a mount**
Of alabaster, topt with golden spires:
There, on the highest pinnacle, he set
4.550 The Son of God, and added thus in scorn: —

139

19

F#A top row of page # in First Edition
(1671) [Link](#).

♦ row of last line of this edition

MILTON
PARADISE
REGAINED
BOOK 4



.ORG
DIGITAL CLASSICS

PREVIEW
P.R. 1

A 3L 1 - 550
B 1L 551 - 639

THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

INTERLEAVABLE

language: Modern English (1671)
copy text: D. Masson (1890)
typeface: Kings Caslon
by Dalton Maag

This UNRESTRICTED INTERLEAVABLE
LAYOUT of this PUBLIC DOMAIN TEXT
is available for free at [ARCHIVE.ORG](https://archive.org) (LINK).

EPICPOEM.ORG 693 lines 3.0

As some way-faring Man, who wanders o'er
In Thought, a Length of Lands he trod before,
Sends forth his active Mind from Place to Place,
Joins Hill to Dale, and measures Space with Space:

PRINT
2-SIDED:

145 to 152

21

145

F78	PERPLEXED and troubled at his bad success	140 (100C)	"Fair morning yet betides thee, Son of God,	
	The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,	20 (11C)	After a dismal night. I heard the wrack,	
✓12K	Discovered in his fraud, thrown from his hope		As earth and sky would mingle; but myself	
5	So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric		Was distant; and these flaws, though mortals fear them,	
	That sleeked his tongue, and won so much on Eve,		As dangerous to the pillared frame of Heaven,	455
	So little here, nay lost. But Eve was Eve;		Or to the Earth's dark basis underneath,	
	This far his over-match, who, self-deceived		Are to the main as inconsiderable	
	And rash, beforehand had no better weighed		And harmless, if not wholesome, as a sneeze	
	The strength he was to cope with, or his own.		To man's less universe , and soon are gone.	
10	But — as a man who had been matchless held		Yet, as being oft-times noxious where they light	460
	In cunning, over-reached where least he thought,		On man, beast, plant, wasteful and turbulent,	
F79	To salve his credit, and for very spite,		Like turbulencies in the affairs of men,	
	Still will be tempting him who foils him still,		Over whose heads they roar, and seem to point,	
	And never cease, though to his shame the more;		They oft fore-signify and threaten ill.	
15	Or as a swarm of flies in vintage-time,		This tempest at this desert most was bent;	465
	About the wine-press where sweet must is poured,		Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell'st.	
	Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound;		Did I not tell thee, if thou didst reject	
	Or surging waves against a solid rock,		The perfect season offered with my aid	F103
	Though all to shivers dashed, the assault renew,		To win thy destined seat, but wilt prolong	
20	(Vain battery!) and in froth or bubbles end —		All to the push of fate, pursue thy way	470
	So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse		Of gaining David's throne no man knows when	
	Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,		(For both the when and how is nowhere told),	
	Yet gives not o'er, though desperate of success,		Thou shalt be what thou art ordained, no doubt;	
	And his vain importunity pursues.		For Angels have proclaimed it, but concealing	
25	He brought our Saviour to the western side		The time and means? Each act is rightliest done	475
L1[I]	Of that high mountain, whence he might behold		Not when it must, but when it may be best.	L1[I]
A	Another plain, long, but in breadth not wide,		If thou observe not this, be sure to find	A
	Washed by the southern sea, and on the north		What I foretold thee — many a hard assay	
	To equal length backed with a ridge of hills		Of dangers, and adversities, and pains,	
30	That screened the fruits of the earth and seats of men		Ere thou of Israel's sceptre get fast hold;	480
F80	From cold Septentrion blasts; thence in the midst		Whereof this ominous night that closed thee round,	
	Divided by a river, off whose banks	2 (1C)	So many terrors, voices, prodigies,	
	On each side an imperial city stood,		May warn thee, as a sure foregoing sign."	
	With towers and temples proudly elevate		So talked he, while the Son of God went on,	
35	On seven small hills, with palaces adorned,		And staid not, but in brief him answered thus: —	485
	Porches and theatres, baths, aqueducts,		"Me worse than wet thou find'st not; other harm	
	Statues and trophies, and triumphal arcs,		Those terrors which thou speak'st of did me none.	F104
	Gardens and groves, presented to his eyes		I never feared they could, though noising loud	
♦	Above the highth of mountains interposed —	2	And threatening nigh: what they can do as signs	
40	By what strange parallax, or optic skill		Betokening or ill-boding I contemn	490
	Of vision, multiplied through air, or glass		As false portents, not sent from God, but thee;	
	Of telescope, were curious to enquire.		Who, knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,	
	And now the Tempter thus his silence broke: —		Obtrud'st thy offered aid, that I, accepting,	
	"The city which thou seest no other deem		At least might seem to hold all power of thee,	
45	Than great and glorious Rome, Queen of the Earth		Ambitious Spirit! and would'st be thought my God;	495
Milton	So far renowned, and with the spoils enriched		And storm'st, refused, thinking to terrify	Milton
Paradise	Of nations. There the Capitol thou seest,		Me to thy will! Desist (thou art discerned,	Paradise
Regained	Above the rest lifting his stately head		And toil'st in vain), nor me in vain molest."	Regained
	On the Tarpeian rock, her citadel	22	To whom the Fiend, now swoln with rage, replied: —	
4.50 F81	Impregnable; and there Mount Palatine,	146	"Then hear, O Son of David, virgin-born!	4.500

	Our Saviour, meek, and with untroubled mind	141 (101C)	The imperial palace, compass huge, and high	
Milton	After his aery jaunt, though hurried sore,	21 (12C)	The structure, skill of noblest architects,	Milton
Paradise	Hungry and cold, betook him to his rest,		With gilded battlements, conspicuous far,	Paradise
Regained	Wherever, under some concourse of shades,		Turrets, and terraces, and glittering spires.	Regained
405	Whose branching arms thick intertwined might shield		Many a fair edifice besides, more like	55
	From dews and damps of night his sheltered head;		Houses of gods — so well I have disposed	
	But, sheltered, slept in vain; for at his head		My aery microscope — thou may'st behold,	
	The Tempter watched, and soon with ugly dreams		Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs	
	Disturbed his sleep. And either tropic now		Carved work, the hand of famed artificers	
410	'Gan thunder, and both ends of heaven; the clouds		In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold.	60
F100	From many a horrid rift abortive poured		Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see	
	Fierce rain with lightning mixed, water with fire,		What conflux issuing forth, or entering in:	
	In ruin reconciled; nor slept the winds		Praetors, proconsuls to their provinces	
	Within their stony caves, but rushed abroad		Hasting, or on return, in robes of state;	
415	From the four hinges of the world, and fell		Lictors and rods, the ensigns of their power;	65
	On the vexed wilderness, whose tallest pines,		Legions and cohorts, turms of horse and wings;	
	Though rooted deep as high, and sturdiest oaks,		Or embassies from regions far remote,	
	Bowed their stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,		In various habits, on the Appian road,	
	Or torn up sheer. Ill wast thou shrouded then,		Or on the Aemilian — some from farthest south,	F82
420	O patient Son of God, yet only stood'st		Syene, and where the shadow both way falls,	70
	Unshaken! Nor yet staid the terror there:		Meroe, Nilotic isle, and, more to west,	
	Infernal ghosts and hellish furies round		The realm of Bocchus to the Blackmoor sea;	
	Environed thee; some howled, some yelled, some shrieked,		From the Asian kings (and Parthian among these),	
	Some bent at thee their fiery darts, while thou		From India and the Golden Chersoness,	
425	Sat'st unappalled in calm and sinless peace.		And utmost Indian isle Taprobane,	75
L2[O]	Thus passed the night so foul, till Morning fair		Dusk faces with white silken turbants wreathed;	L2[O]
A	Came forth with pilgrim steps, in amice grey,		From Gallia, Gades, and the British west;	A
	Who with her radiant finger stilled the roar		Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians north	
	Of thunder, chased the clouds, and laid the winds,		Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.	
430 F101	And grisly spectres, which the Fiend had raised		All nations now to Rome obedience pay —	80
	To tempt the Son of God with terrors dire.		To Rome's great Emperor, whose wide domain,	
	And now the sun with more effectual beams	3 (2C)	In ample territory, wealth and power,	
	Had cheered the face of earth, and dried the wet		Civility of manners, arts and arms,	
	From drooping plant, or dropping tree; the birds,		And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer	
435	Who all things now behold more fresh and green,		Before the Parthian. These two thrones except,	85
	After a night of storm so ruinous,		The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,	
	Cleared up their choicest notes in bush and spray,		Shared among petty kings too far removed;	
	To gratulate the sweet return of morn.		These having shewn thee, I have shewn thee all	F83
♦	Nor yet, amidst this joy and brightest morn,	3	The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.	
440	Was absent, after all his mischief done,		This Emperor hath no son, and now is old,	90
	The Prince of Darkness; glad would also seem		Old and lascivious, and from Rome retired	
	Of this fair change, and to our Saviour came;		To Capreae, an island small but strong	
	Yet with no new device (they all were spent) —		On the Campanian shore, with purpose there	
	Rather by this his last affront resolved,		His horrid lusts in private to enjoy;	
445	Desperate of better course, to vent his rage		Committing to a wicked favourite	95
	And mad despite to be so oft repelled.		All public cares, and yet of him suspicious;	
	Him walking on a sunny hill he found,		Hated of all, and hating. With what ease,	
	Backed on the north and west by a thick wood;		Endued with regal virtues as thou art,	
F102	Out of the wood he starts in wonted shape,	23	Appearing, and beginning noble deeds,	
4.450	And in a careless mood thus to him said: —	147	Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne,	4.100

	Now made a sty, and, in his place ascending, A victor-people free from servile yoke! And with my help thou may'st; to me the power Is given, and by that right I give it thee.	142 (102C) 22 (13C)	Unless where moral virtue is expressed By light of Nature, not in all quite lost. Their orators thou then extoll'st as those The top of eloquence — statists indeed, And lovers of their country, as may seem; But herein to our Prophets far beneath, As men divinely taught, and better teaching The solid rules of civil government, In their majestic, unaffected style, Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome. In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt, What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so, What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat; These only, with our Law, best form a king.”	F97 355
105	Aim, therefore, at no less than all the world; Aim at the highest; without the highest attained,			
F84	Will be for thee no sitting, or not long, On David's throne, be prophesied what will.” To whom the Son of God, unmoved, replied: —			
110	“Nor doth this grandeur and majestic show Of luxury, though called magnificence, More than of arms before, allure mine eye, Much less my mind; though thou should'st add to tell Their sumptuous gluttonies, and gorgeous feasts			
115	On citron tables or Atlantic stone (For I have also heard, perhaps have read), Their wines of Setia, Cales, and Falerne, Chios and Crete, and how they quaff in gold, Crystal, and myrrhine cups, embossed with gems			
120	And studs of pearl — to me should'st tell, who thirst And hunger still. Then embassies thou show'st From nations far and nigh! What honour that, But tedious waste of time, to sit and hear So many hollow compliments and lies,			
125	Outlandish flatteries? Then proceed'st to talk			
L2[I] F85	Of the Emperor, how easily subdued,			
A	How gloriously. I shall, thou say'st, expel A brutish monster: what if I withal Expel a Devil who first made him such?			
130	Let his tormentor, Conscience, find him out; For him I was not sent, nor yet to free That people, victor once, now vile and base, Deservedly made vassal — who, once just, Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquered well,	4 (3C)		
135	But govern ill the nations under yoke, Peeling their provinces, exhausted all By lust and rapine; first ambitious grown Of triumph, that insulting vanity;			
♦	Then cruel, by their sports to blood inured	4		
140	Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts exposed; Luxurious by their wealth, and greedier still, And from the daily scene effeminate. What wise and valiant man would seek to free These, thus degenerate, by themselves enslaved,			
F86	Or could of inward slaves make outward free?			
Milton	Know, therefore, when my season comes to sit			
Paradise	On David's throne, it shall be like a tree			
Regained	Spreading and overshadowing all the earth, Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash	24		
4.150	All monarchies besides throughout the world;	148		
			So spake the Son of God; but Satan, now Quite at a loss (for all his darts were spent), Thus to our Saviour, with stern brow, replied: — “Since neither wealth nor honour, arms nor arts, Kingdom nor empire, pleases thee, nor aught By me proposed in life contemplative Or active, tended on by glory or fame, What dost thou in this world? The Wilderness For thee is fittest place: I found thee there, And thither will return thee. Yet remember What I foretell thee; soon thou shalt have cause To wish thou never hadst rejected, thus Nicely or cautiously, my offered aid; Which would have set thee in short time with ease On David's throne, or throne of all the world, Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season, When prophecies of thee are best fulfilled. Now, contrary — if I read aught in heaven, Or heaven write aught of fate — by what the stars Voluminous, or single characters In their conjunction met, give me to spell, Sorrows and labours, opposition, hate, Attends thee; scorns, reproaches, injuries, Violence and stripes, and, lastly, cruel death. A kingdom they portend thee, but what kingdom, Real or allegoric, I discern not; Nor when: eternal sure — as without end, Without beginning; for no date prefixed Directs me in the starry rubric set.” So saying, he took (for still he knew his power Not yet expired), and to the Wilderness Brought back, the Son of God, and left him there, Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose, As daylight sunk, and brought in louring Night, Her shadowy offspring, unsubstantial both, Privation mere of light and absent day.	360 365 370 375 L2[I] A 380 385 390 F99 395 Milton Paradise Regained 4.400

	By him called virtue, and his virtuous man,	143 (103C)	And of my Kingdom there shall be no end.	
Milton	Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing,	23 (14C)	Means there shall be to this; but what the means	Milton
Paradise	Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,		Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell.”	Paradise
Regained	As fearing God nor man, contemning all		To whom the Tempter, impudent, replied: —	Regained
305	Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life —		“I see all offers made by me how slight	155
	Which, when he lists, he leaves, or boasts he can;		Thou valuest, because offered, and reject’st.	
	For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,		Nothing will please the difficult and nice,	
	Or subtle shifts conviction to evade.		Or nothing more than still to contradict.	
	Alas! what can they teach, and not mislead,		On the other side know also thou that I	
310	Ignorant of themselves, of God much more,		On what I offer set as high esteem,	160
	And how the World began, and how Man fell,		Nor what I part with mean to give for naught.	
	Degraded by himself, on grace depending?		All these, which in a moment thou behold’st,	
	Much of the Soul they talk, but all awry;		The kingdoms of the world, to thee I give	
	And in themselves seek virtue; and to themselves		(For, given to me, I give to whom I please),	F87
315	All glory arrogate, to God give none;		No trifle; yet with this reserve, not else —	165
F95	Rather accuse him under usual names,		On this condition, if thou wilt fall down,	
	Fortune and Fate, as one regardless quite		And worship me as thy superior lord	
	Of mortal things. Who, therefore, seeks in these		(Easily done), and hold them all of me;	
	True wisdom finds her not, or, by delusion		For what can less so great a gift deserve?”	
320	Far worse, her false resemblance only meets,		Whom thus our Saviour answered with disdain: —	170
	An empty cloud. However, many books,		“I never liked thy talk, thy offers less;	
	Wise men have said, are wearisome; who reads		Now both abhor, since thou hast dared to utter	
	Incessantly, and to his reading brings not		The abominable terms, impious condition.	
	A spirit and judgment equal or superior,		But I endure the time, till which expired	
325	(And what he brings what needs he elsewhere seek?)		Thou hast permission on me. It is written,	175
L3[O]	Uncertain and unsettled still remains,		The first of all commandments, ‘Thou shalt worship	L3[O]
A	Deep-versed in books and shallow in himself,		The Lord thy God, and only Him shalt serve’;	A
	Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys		And dar’st thou to the Son of God propound	
	And trifles for choice matters, worth a sponge,		To worship thee, accursed? now more accursed	
330	As children gathering pebbles on the shore.		For this attempt, bolder than that on Eve,	180
	Or, if I would delight my private hours		And more blasphemous; which expect to rue.	
	With music or with poem, where so soon	5 (4C)	The kingdoms of the world to thee were given!	
	As in our native language can I find		Permitted rather, and by thee usurped;	F88
	That solace? All our Law and Story strewed		Other donation none thou canst produce.	
F96	With hymns, our Psalms with artful terms inscribed,		If given, by whom but by the King of kings,	185
	Our Hebrew songs and harps, in Babylon		God over all supreme? If given to thee,	
	That pleased so well our victor’s ear, declare		By thee how fairly is the Giver now	
	That rather Greece from us these arts derived —		Repaid! But gratitude in thee is lost	
♦	Ill imitated while they loudest sing	5	Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame	
340	The vices of their deities, and their own,		As offer them to me, the Son of God —	190
	In fable, hymn, or song, so personating		To me my own, on such abhorred pact,	
	Their gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.		That I fall down and worship thee as God?	
	Remove their swelling epithets, thick-laid		Get thee behind me! Plain thou now appear’st	
	As varnish on a harlot’s cheek, the rest,		That Evil One, Satan for ever damned.”	
345	Thin-sown with aught of profit or delight,		To whom the Fiend, with fear abashed, replied: —	195
	Will far be found unworthy to compare		“Be not so sore offended, Son of God —	
	With Sion’s songs, to all true tastes excelling,		Though Sons of God both Angels are and Men —	
	Where God is praised aright and godlike men,		If I, to try whether in higher sort	
	The Holiest of Holies and his Saints	25	Than these thou bear’st that title, have proposed	
4.350	(Such are from God inspired, not such from thee);	149	What both from Men and Angels I receive,	4.200

F89	Tetrarchs of Fire, Air, Flood, and on the Earth	144 (104C)	The schools of ancient sages — his who bred	
	Nations besides from all the quartered winds —	24 (15C)	Great Alexander to subdue the world,	
^11K	God of this World invoked, and World beneath.		Lyceum there; and painted Stoa next.	
	Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold		There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power	255
210	To me most fatal, me it most concerns.		Of harmony, in tones and numbers hit	
	The trial hath indamaged thee no way,		By voice or hand, and various-measured verse,	
215	Rather more honour left and more esteem;		Aeolian charms and Dorian lyric odes,	
	Me naught advantaged, missing what I aimed.		And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,	
220	Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,		Blind Melesigenes, thence Homer called,	F92
	The kingdoms of this world; I shall no more		Whose poem Phoebus challenged for his own.	260
225	Advise thee; gain them as thou canst, or not.		Thence what the lofty grave Tragedians taught	
	And thou thyself seem'st otherwise inclined		In chorus or iambic, teachers best	
F90	Than to a worldly crown, addicted more		Of moral prudence, with delight received	
	To contemplation and profound dispute;		In brief sententious precepts, while they treat	
230	As by that early action may be judged,		Of fate, and chance, and change in human life,	265
	When, slipping from thy mother's eye, thou went'st		High actions and high passions best describing.	
235	Alone into the Temple, there wast found		Thence to the famous Orators repair,	
	Among the gravest Rabbies, disputant		Those ancient whose resistless eloquence	
240	On points and questions fitting Moses' chair,		Wielded at will that fierce democracy,	
	Teaching, not taught. The childhood shows the man,		Shook the Arsenal, and fulminated over Greece	270
L3[I]	As morning shews the day. Be famous, then,		To Macedon and Artaxerxes' throne.	
	By wisdom; as thy empire must extend,		To sage Philosophy next lend thine ear,	
A	So let extend thy mind o'er all the world		From heaven descended to the low-roofed house	
	In knowledge; all things in it comprehend.		Of Socrates — see there his tenement —	
245	All knowledge is not couched in Moses' law,		Whom, well inspired, the oracle pronounced	275
	The Pentateuch, or what the Prophets wrote;		Wisest of men; from whose mouth issued forth	L3[I]
250	The Gentiles also know, and write, and teach		Mellifluous streams, that watered all the schools	A
	To admiration, led by Nature's light;		Of Academics old and new, with those	F93
255	And with the Gentiles much thou must converse,		Surnamed Peripatetics, and the sect	
	Ruling them by persuasion, as thou mean'st.		Epicurean, and the Stoic severe.	280
260	Without their learning, how wilt thou with them,	6 (5C)	These here revolve, or, as thou likest, at home,	
	Or they with thee, hold conversation meet?		Till time mature thee to a kingdom's weight;	
265	How wilt thou reason with them, how refute		These rules will render thee a king complete	
	Their idolisms, traditions, paradoxes?		Within thyself, much more with empire joined."	
270	Error by his own arms is best evinced.		To whom our Saviour sagely thus replied: —	285
	Look once more, ere we leave this specular mount,		"Think not but that I know these things; or, think	
275	Westward, much nearer by south-west; behold		I know them not, not therefore am I short	
	Where on the Aegean shore a city stands,		Of knowing what I ought. He who receives	
280	Built nobly, pure the air and light the soil —	6	Light from above, from the Fountain of Light,	
	Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts		No other doctrine needs, though granted true;	290
285	And eloquence, native to famous wits		But these are false, or little else but dreams,	
	Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,		Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.	
290	City or suburban, studious walks and shades.		The first and wisest of them all professed	
	See there the olive-grove of Academe,		To know this only, that he nothing knew;	
295	Plato's retirement, where the Attic bird		The next to fabling fell and smooth conceits;	295
	Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long;		A third sort doubted all things, though plain sense;	Milton
300	There, flowery hill, Hymettus, with the sound		Others in virtue placed felicity,	F94 Paradise
	Of bees' industrious murmur, oft invites		But virtue joined with riches and long life;	Regained
305	To studious musing; there Ilissus rowls	26	In corporal pleasure he, and careless ease;	
	His whispering stream. Within the walls then view	150	The Stoic last in philosophic pride,	4.300

	To be infringed, our freedom and our being	145	"There stand, if thou wilt stand; to stand upright	
Milton	In this fair empire won of Earth and Air) —	25	Will ask thee skill. I to thy Father's house	Milton
Paradise	For this ill news I bring: The Woman's Seed,		Have brought thee, and highest placed: highest is best.	Paradise
Regained	Destined to this, is late of woman born.		Now shew thy progeny; if not to stand,	Regained
F5	His birth to our just fear gave no small cause;		Cast thyself down. Safely, if Son of God;	555
	But his growth now to youth's full flower, displaying		For it is written, 'He will give command	
	All virtue, grace and wisdom to achieve		Concerning thee to his Angels; in their hands	
	Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.		They shall uplift thee, lest at any time	
70	Before him a great Prophet, to proclaim		Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone."	
^^2K	His coming, is sent harbinger, who all		To whom thus Jesus: "Also it is written,	560
	Invites, and in the consecrated stream		'Tempt not the Lord thy God.'" He said, and stood;	
	Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so		But Satan, smitten with amazement, fell.	
	Purified to receive him pure, or rather		As when Earth's son, Antaeus (to compare	F108
75	To do him honour as their King. All come,		Small things with greatest), in Irassa strove	
	And he himself among them was baptized —		With Jove's Alcides, and, oft foiled, still rose,	565
	Not thence to be more pure, but to receive		Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,	
	The testimony of Heaven, that who he is		Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple joined,	
	Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw		Throttled at length in the air expired and fell,	
80	The Prophet do him reverence; on him, rising		So, after many a foil, the Tempter proud,	
	Out of the water, Heaven above the clouds		Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride	570
	Unfold her crystal doors; thence on his head		Fell whence he stood to see his victor fall;	
	A perfect dove descend (whate'er it meant);		And, as that Theban monster that proposed	
	And out of Heaven the sovereign voice I heard,		Her riddle, and him who solved it not devoured,	
F6	'This is my Son beloved, — in him am pleased.'		That once found out and solved, for grief and spite	
	His mother, then, is mortal, but his Sire		Cast herself headlong from the Ismenian steep,	575
L1[O]	He who obtains the monarchy of Heaven;		So, strook with dread and anguish, fell the Fiend,	L1[O]
B	And what will He not do to advance his Son?		And to his crew, that sat consulting, brought	B
	His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,		Joyless triumphals of his hoped success,	
90	When his fierce thunder drove us to the Deep;		Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,	
	Who this is we must learn, for Man he seems		Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God.	580
	In all his lineaments, though in his face		So Satan fell; and straight a fiery globe	
	The glimpses of his Father's glory shine.	7	Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,	F109
	Ye see our danger on the utmost edge		Who on their plummy vans received Him soft	
95	Of hazard, which admits no long debate,		From his uneasy station, and upbore,	
	But must with something sudden be opposed		As on a floating couch, through the blithe air;	585
	(Not force, but well-couched fraud, well-woven snares),		Then, in a flowery valley, set him down	
	Ere in the head of nations he appear,		On a green bank, and set before him spread	
	Their king, their leader, and supreme on Earth.		A table of celestial food, divine	
1.100	I, when no other durst, sole undertook	7	Ambrosial fruits fetched from the Tree of Life,	
	The dismal expedition to find out		And from the Fount of Life ambrosial drink,	590
♦	And ruin Adam, and the exploit performed		That soon refreshed him wearied, and repaired	
	Successfully: a calmer voyage now		What hunger, if aught hunger, had impaired,	
F7	Will waft me; and the way found prosperous once		Or thirst; and, as he fed, Angelic quires	
105	Induces best to hope of like success."		Sung heavenly anthems of his victory	
	He ended, and his words impression left		Over temptation and the Tempter proud: —	595
	Of much amazement to the infernal crew,		"True Image of the Father, whether throned	
	Distracted and surprised with deep dismay		In the bosom of bliss, and light of light	
	At these sad tidings. But no time was then		Conceiving, or, remote from Heaven, enshrined	
110	For long indulgence to their fears or grief:	27	In fleshly tabernacle and human form,	
1.111	Unanimous they all commit the care	151	Wandering the wilderness — whatever place,	4.600

F110	Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing	146	As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,	
	The Son of God, with Godlike force endued	26	And bear through highth or depth of Nature's bounds,	
	Against the attempter of thy Father's throne		With prosperous wing full summed, to tell of deeds	15
	And thief of Paradise! Him long of old		Above heroic, though in secret done,	
605	Thou didst debel, and down from Heaven cast		And unrecorded left through many an age:	
	With all his army; now thou hast avenged		Worthy to have not remained so long unsung.	
	Supplanted Adam, and, by vanquishing		Now had the great Proclaimer, with a voice	
	Temptation, hast regained lost Paradise,		More awful than the sound of trumpet, cried	20
	And frustrated the conquest fraudulent.		Repentance, and Heaven's kingdom nigh at hand	
610	He never more henceforth will dare set foot		To all baptized. To his great baptism flocked	
	In paradise to tempt; his snares are broke.		With awe the regions round, and with them came	
	For, though that seat of earthly bliss be failed,		From Nazareth the son of Joseph deemed	
	A fairer Paradise is founded now		To the flood Jordan — came as then obscure,	
	For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou,		Unmarked, unknown. But him the Baptist soon	25
615	A Saviour, art come down to reinstall ;		Descried, divinely warned, and witness bore	
	Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,		As to his worthier, and would have resigned	F3
	Of tempter and temptation without fear.		To him his heavenly office. Nor was long	
	But thou, Infernal Serpent! shalt not long		His witness unconfirmed: on him baptized	30
	Rule in the clouds. Like an autumnal star,		Heaven opened, and in likeness of a dove	
620 F111	Or lightning, thou shalt fall from Heaven, trod down		The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice	
	Under his feet. For proof , ere this thou feel'st		From Heaven pronounced him his beloved Son .	
	Thy wound (yet not thy last and deadliest wound)		That heard the Adversary, who, roving still	
	By this repulse received, and hold'st in Hell		About the world, at that assembly famed	
	No triumph; in all her gates Abaddon rues		Would not be last, and, with the voice divine	35
625	Thy bold attempt. Hereafter learn with awe		Nigh thunder-struck, the exalted man to whom	
L1[I]	To dread the Son of God. He, all unarmed,		Such high attest was given a while surveyed	L1[I]
B	Shall chase thee, with the terror of his voice,		With wonder; then, with envy fraught and rage,	B
	From thy demoniac holds, possession foul —		Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air	
	Thee and thy legions; yelling they shall fly,		To council summons all his mighty peers,	40
630	And beg to hide them in a herd of swine,		Within thick clouds and dark tenfold involved	
	Lest he command them down into the Deep,		A gloomy consistory; and them amidst,	
	Bound, and to torment sent before their time.	8	With looks aghast and sad, he thus bespake: —	
	Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both Worlds,		“O ancient Powers of Air and this wide World	
	Queller of Satan! On thy glorious work		(For much more willingly I mention Air,	45
635	Now enter, and begin to save Mankind.”		This our old conquest, than remember Hell,	
	Thus they the Son of God, our Saviour meek,		Our hated habitation), well ye know	F4
Paradise	Sung victor, and, from heavenly feast refreshed,		How many ages, as the years of men,	
Regained	Brought on his way with joy. He, unobserved,		This Universe we have possessed, and ruled	
4.639 ♦	Home to his mother's house private returned.	8	In manner at our will the affairs of Earth,	1.50
1.1 F1	I, WHO erewhile the happy Garden sung		Since Adam and his facile consort Eve	
	By one man's disobedience lost, now sing		Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since	
	Recovered Paradise to all mankind,		With dread attending when that fatal wound	
	By one man's firm obedience fully tried		Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve	
5	Through all temptation, and the Tempter foiled		Upon my head. Long the decrees of Heaven	55
	In all his wiles, defeated and repulsed,		Delay, for longest time to Him is short;	
	And Eden raised in the waste Wilderness.		And now, too soon for us, the circling hours	Milton
	Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite		This dreaded time have compassed, wherein we	Paradise
F2	Into the desert, his victorious field		Must bide the stroke of that long-threatened wound	Regained
10	Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence	28	(At least, if so we can, and by the head	60
1.11	By proof the undoubted Son of God , inspire,	152	Broken be not intended all our power	1.61
			To be infringed, our freedom and our being	

Notes

Notes

MILTON
PARADISE
LOST
BOOK 12

PREVIEW
P.L. 1

L1 L2
C C



.O R G

DIGITAL CLASSICS

INTERLEAVABLE



THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

VIEW TWO PAGE SPREAD

Lay vanquished, rolling in the fiery gulf,
Milton Confounded, though immortal. But his doom
Paradise Reserved him to more wrath; for now the thought
Lost Both of lost happiness and lasting pain
 Torments him: round he throws his baleful eyes,
 That witnessed huge affliction and dismay,
 Mixed with obdurate pride and steadfast hate.
 At once, as far as Angels ken, he views
 60 The dismal situation waste and wild.
 A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,
 As one great furnace flamed; yet from those flames
 No light; but rather darkness visible
 Served only to discover sights of woe,
 65 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes
 That comes to all, but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
 With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed.
 70 Such place Eternal Justice has prepared
 For those rebellious; here their prison ordained
 In utter darkness, and their portion set,
 As far removed from God and light of Heaven
 As from the centre thrice to th' utmost pole.
 75 Oh how unlike the place from whence they fell!
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelmed
L1[O] With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
C He soon discerns; and, weltering by his side,
F4 One next himself in power, and next in crime,
 80 Long after known in Palestine, and named
 Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,
S5 And thence in Heaven called Satan, with bold words
 Breaking the horrid silence, thus began:
 "If thou beest he, — but O how fallen! how changed
 85 From him who, in the happy realms of light
 Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine
 Myriads, though bright! — if he, whom mutual league,
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise
 90 Joined with me once, now misery hath joined
 In equal ruin . . . into what pit thou seest
 From what height fallen, so much the stronger proved
 He with his thunder; and till then who knew
 The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,
 95 Nor what the potent Victor in his rage
 Can else inflict, do I repent, or change,
 Though changed in outward lustre, that fixed mind,
 And high disdain from sense of injured merit,
 That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,
 1.100 And to the fierce contentions brought along
 1.101 Innumerable force of Spirits armed,
 That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,

117

In mean estate live moderate, till, grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow. **Milton**
 But first among the priests dissention springs, **Paradise**
 Men who attend the altar, and should most **Lost**
 Endeavour peace, their strife pollution brings 355
 Upon the temple itself: at last they seize
 The scepter and regard not David's sons,
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed King, Messiah, might be born
 Barred of his right; yet at his birth a star, 360
 Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come;
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire **S325**
 His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold.
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night; 365
 They gladly thither haste, and by a quire
 Of squadroned Angels hear his carol sung.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire
 The power of the Most High. He shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign 370
 With Earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens."
 He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy **F332**
 Surcharged, as had like grief been dewed in tears,
 Without the vent of words; which these he breathed:
 "O prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand **L1[O]**
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have searched in vain; **C**
 Why our great Expectation should be called
 The seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of Heaven, yet from my loins 380
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God Most High: so God with Man unites.
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain. Say where and when
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel." 385
 To whom thus Michael: "Dream not of their fight,
 As of a duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel. Not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil
 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome 390
 Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound;
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 In thee and in thy seed; nor can this be, **S326**
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the law of God, imposed
 On penalty of death, and suffering death,
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow! 12.400

121
155

So only can high Justice rest appaid.
 The law of God exact he shall fulfill
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 F333 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment
 405 He shall endure, by coming in the flesh
 To a reproachful life and cursed death;
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption; and that his obedience
 Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits
 410 To save them, not their own, though legal, works.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphemed,
 Seised on by force, judged, and to death condemned
 A shameful and accursed, nailed to the cross
 By his own nation; slain for bringing life;
 415 But to the cross he nails thy enemies,
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucified,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,
 420 But soon revives; Death over him no power
 Shall long usurp. Ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,
 425 His death for Man, as many as offered life
 L1[I] Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 C By faith not void of works. This Godlike act
 S327 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldest have died,
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act
 430 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms,
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings
 Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
 435 A gentle wafting to immortal life.
 F334 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times to appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life
 Still followed him; to them shall leave in charge
 440 To teach all nations what of him they learned
 And his salvation; them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream; the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,
 445 For death, like that which the Redeemer died.
 Milton All nations they shall teach; for from that day,
 Paradise Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Lost Salvation shall be preached, but to the sons
 ♦ Of Abraham's faith, wherever through the world;
 12.450 So in his seed all nations shall be blest.

118

6

6

122
156

Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
 Brought death into the World and all our woe,
 With loss of Eden, till one greater Man
 Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,
 5 Sing, Heavenly Muse, that, on the secret top
 Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
 That shepherd who first taught the chosen seed
 In the beginning how the heavens and earth
 Rose out of Chaos: or, if Sion hill
 10 Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flowed
 Fast by the oracle of God, I thence
 Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,
 That with no middle flight intends to soar
 S3 Above th' Aonian mount, while it pursues
 F2 Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.
 And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer
 Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,
 Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first
 20 Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread,
 Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyss,
 And mad'st it pregnant. What in me is dark
 Illumine, what is low raise and support;
 That, to the height of this great argument,
 I may assert Eternal Providence,
 25 And justify the ways of God to men.
 Say first — for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,
 L1[I] Nor the deep tract of Hell — say first what cause
 C Moved our grand parents, in that happy state,
 Favoured of Heaven so highly, to fall off
 30 From their Creator, and transgress his will
 For one restraint, lords of the World besides;
 Who first seduced them to that foul revolt?
 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was whose guile,
 Stirred up with envy and revenge, deceived
 35 The mother of mankind, what time his pride
 Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host
 Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring
 To set himself in glory above his peers,
 He trusted to have equalled the Most High,
 40 If he opposed, and with ambitious aim
 Against the throne and monarchy of God,
 Raised impious war in Heaven and battle proud,
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,
 45 With hideous ruin and combustion, down
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
 F3 Milton
 In adamant chains and penal fire,
 S4 Paradise
 Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.
 Lost
 Nine times the space that measures day and night
 1.50
 To mortal men, he, with his horrid crew,
 1.51

(For by the Woman's seed) on all mankind;
Milton That ye may live, which will be many days,
Paradise Both in one faith unanimous, though sad
Lost With cause, for evils past, yet much more cheered
605 With meditation on the happy end."
He ended, and they both descend the hill.
Descended, Adam to the bower where Eve
Lay sleeping ran before her, but found her waked,
And thus with words not sad she him received:
610 "Whence thou returnest, and whither wentest, I know;
For God is also in sleep; and dreams advise,
Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress
Wearied I fell asleep. But now lead on;
615 In me is no delay; with thee to go,
Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,
Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me
Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,
Who for my willful crime art banished hence.
620 This further consolation yet secure
I carry hence; though all by me is lost,
Such favour I unworthy am vouchsafed,
By me the Promised Seed shall all restore."
So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard
625 Well pleased, but answered not; for now, too nigh
L2[O] **S333** The Arch-Angel stood; and from the other hill
C To their fixed station, all in bright array,
F341 The Cherubim descended; on the ground
Gliding meteorous, **as evening mist**
630 **Risen from a river, o'er the marish glides,**
And gathers ground fast at the laborer's heel,
Homeward returning. High in front advanced,
The brandished sword of God before them blazed,
Fierce as a comet, which with torrid heat,
635 **And vapor as the Libyan air adust,**
Began to parch that temperate clime; whereat
In either hand the hastening Angel caught
Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
640 To the subjected plain; then disappeared.
They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
Waved over by that flaming brand; the gate
With dreadful faces thronged and fiery arms.
645 Some natural tears they dropt, but wiped them soon;
The world was all before them, where to choose
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.
They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,
12.649 ♦  Through Eden took their solitary way.
1.1  F Man's first disobedience, and the fruit

119

Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend
With victory, triumphing through the air
Milton Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise
Paradise The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains
Lost Through all his realm, and there confounded leave;
455 Then enter into glory, and resume
His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
Above all names in Heaven; and thence shall come,
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead;
460 To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward
S328 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
Whether in Heaven or Earth; for then the Earth
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
Than this of Eden, and far happier days."
465 So spake the Arch-Angel Michael; then paused,
As at the World's great period; and our sire,
Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied:
F335 "O Goodness infinite, Goodness immense!
That all this good of evil shall produce,
470 And evil turn to good; more wonderful
Than that which by creation first brought forth
Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,
Whether I should repent me now of sin
By me done, and occasioned; or rejoice
475 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring;
L2[O] To God more glory, more good-will to Men
C From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.
But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven
Must reascend, what will betide the few
480 His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,
The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide
His people, who defend? Will they not deal
Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?"
485 "Be sure they will," said the Angel; "but from Heaven
He to his own a Comforter will send,
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
His Spirit within them, and the law of faith,
Working through love upon their hearts shall write,
490 To guide them in all truth; and also arm
With spiritual armour, able to resist
Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts;
What man can do against them not afraid,
Though to the death; against such cruelties
S323("32") With inward consolations recompensed,
495 And oft supported so as shall amaze
Their proudest persecutors. For the Spirit,
Poured first on his Apostles, whom he sends
To evangelize the nations, then on all
Baptized, shall them with wonderous gifts endue **F336** 12.500

To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from Heaven: at length
 505 Their ministry performed, and race well run,
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven
 510 To their own vile advantages shall turn
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions taint,
 Left only in those written records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.
 515 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular power; though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Spirit of God, promised alike and given
 520 To all believers; and from that pretence
 Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force
 On every conscience; laws which none shall find
 Left them inrolled, or what the Spirit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
 525 But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind
L2[I] His consort, Liberty? what, but unbuild
C S330 His living temples, built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith, not another's? for, on Earth,
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 530 Infallible? yet many will presume.
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
F337 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of spirit and truth; the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 535 Religion satisfied; Truth shall retire
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found. So shall the world go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,
 Under her own weight groaning; till the day
 540 Appear of respiration to the just,
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promised to thy aid,
 The Woman's Seed; obscurely then foretold,
 Now ampler known thy Saviour and thy Lord;
 545 Last, in the clouds, from Heaven to be revealed
Milton In glory of the Father, to dissolve
Paradise Satan with his perverted world; then raise
Lost From the conflagrant mass, purged and refined,
 ♦ New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,
 12.550 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love;

120 (89c)

8 (4c)

8

124
158

To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.”
 He ended; and thus Adam last replied:
 “How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,
 Measured this transient world, the race of time,
 Till time stand fixed! Beyond is all abyss, 555
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart;
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. **S331** 560
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe
 His providence, and on him sole depend, **F338**
 Merciful over all his works, with good 565
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deemed weak
 Subverting worldly-strong, and worldly-wise
 By simply-meek: that suffering for truth's sake
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570
 And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;
 Taught this by his example, whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.”
 To whom thus also the Angel last replied:
 This having learned, thou hast attained the sum 575
 Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the stars **L2[I]**
 Thou knewest by name, and all the ethereal powers, **C**
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,
 Or works of God in Heaven, air, earth, or sea,
 And all the riches of this world enjoyedst, 580
 And all the rule, one empire. Only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance; add love,
 By name to come called charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loth 585
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A Paradise within thee, happier far. —
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation; for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence. And see! the guards, 590
 By me encamped on yonder hill, expect
 Their motion; at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round. **S332**
 We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve.
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calmed
 Portending good, and all her spirits composed **F339**
 To meek submission thou, at season fit, **Milton**
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard; **Paradise**
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know, **Lost**
 The great deliverance by her seed to come 12.600

Notes

Notes

MILTON
PARADISE
REGAINED
BOOK 4

PREVIEW
P.L. 1

L1
B



INTERLEAVABLE



THESE LINES HAVE CONVERGED TO TELL
A STORY THAT SATISFIES ME IN MY HEART,
WHERE ONLY THERE IT REALLY COUNTS.

VIEW TWO PAGE SPREAD

	A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,	145	"There stand, if thou wilt stand; to stand upright	
Milton	As one great furnace flamed; yet from those flames	25	Will ask thee skill. I to thy Father's house	Milton
Paradise	No light; but rather darkness visible		Have brought thee, and highest placed: highest is best.	Paradise
Lost	Served only to discover sights of woe,		Now shew thy progeny; if not to stand,	Regained
65	Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace		Cast thyself down. Safely, if Son of God;	555
	And rest can never dwell, hope never comes		For it is written, 'He will give command	
	That comes to all, but torture without end		Concerning thee to his Angels; in their hands	
	Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed		They shall uplift thee, lest at any time	
	With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed.		Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone.'" "	
70	Such place Eternal Justice has prepared		To whom thus Jesus: "Also it is written,	560
	For those rebellious; here their prison ordained		'Tempt not the Lord thy God.'" He said, and stood;	
	In utter darkness, and their portion set,		But Satan, smitten with amazement, fell.	
	As far removed from God and light of Heaven		As when Earth's son, Antaeus (to compare	F108
	As from the centre thrice to th' utmost pole.		Small things with greatest), in Irassa strove	
75	Oh how unlike the place from whence they fell!		With Jove's Alcides, and, oft foiled, still rose,	565
	There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelmed		Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,	
	With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,		Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple joined,	
	He soon discerns; and, weltering by his side,		Throttled at length in the air expired and fell,	
F4	One next himself in power, and next in crime,		So, after many a foil, the Tempter proud,	
80	Long after known in Palestine, and named		Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride	570
	Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,		Fell whence he stood to see his victor fall;	
S5	And thence in Heaven called Satan, with bold words		And, as that Theban monster that proposed	
	Breaking the horrid silence, thus began:		Her riddle, and him who solved it not devoured,	
	"If thou beest he, — but O how fallen! how changed		That once found out and solved, for grief and spite	
85	From him who, in the happy realms of light		Cast herself headlong from the Ismenian steep,	575
L1[O]	Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine		So, strook with dread and anguish, fell the Fiend,	L1[O]
B	Myriads, though bright! — if he, whom mutual league,		And to his crew, that sat consulting, brought	B
	United thoughts and counsels, equal hope		Joyless triumphals of his hoped success,	
	And hazard in the glorious enterprise		Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,	
90	Joined with me once, now misery hath joined		Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God.	580
	In equal ruin . . . into what pit thou seest		So Satan fell; and straight a fiery globe	
	From what height fallen, so much the stronger proved	7	Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,	F109
	He with his thunder; and till then who knew		Who on their plummy vans received Him soft	
	The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,		From his uneasy station, and upbore,	
95	Nor what the potent Victor in his rage		As on a floating couch, through the blithe air;	585
	Can else inflict, do I repent, or change,		Then, in a flowery valley, set him down	
	Though changed in outward lustre, that fixed mind,		On a green bank, and set before him spread	
	And high disdain from sense of injured merit,		A table of celestial food, divine	
	That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,	7	Ambrosial fruits fetched from the Tree of Life,	
1.100	And to the fierce contentions brought along		And from the Fount of Life ambrosial drink,	590
	Innumerable force of Spirits armed,		That soon refreshed him wearied, and repaired	
	That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,		What hunger, if aught hunger, had impaired,	
	His utmost power with adverse power opposed		Or thirst; and, as he fed, Angelic quires	
	In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,		Sung heavenly anthems of his victory	
105	And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?		Over temptation and the Tempter proud: —	595
@	All is not lost — the unconquerable will,		"True Image of the Father, whether throned	
	And study of revenge, immortal hate,		In the bosom of bliss, and light of light	
	And courage never to submit or yield:		Conceiving, or, remote from Heaven, enshrined	
	And what is else not to be overcome?	27	In fleshly tabernacle and human form,	
1.110	That glory never shall his wrath or might	151	Wandering the wilderness — whatever place,	4.600
F5	Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace	161		

F110	Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing	146	Fast by the oracle of God, I thence	
	The Son of God, with Godlike force endued	26	Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,	
	Against the attempter of thy Father's throne		That with no middle flight intends to soar	S3
	And thief of Paradise! Him long of old		Above th' Aonian mount, while it pursues	F2
605	Thou didst delude, and down from Heaven cast		Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.	
	With all his army; now thou hast avenged		And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer	
	Supplanted Adam, and, by vanquishing		Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,	
	Temptation, hast regained lost Paradise,		Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first	
	And frustrated the conquest fraudulent.		Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread,	20
610	He never more henceforth will dare set foot		Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyss,	
	In paradise to tempt; his snares are broke.		And mad'st it pregnant. What in me is dark	
	For, though that seat of earthly bliss be failed,		Illumine, what is low raise and support;	
	A fairer Paradise is founded now		That, to the height of this great argument,	
	For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou,		I may assert Eternal Providence,	25
615	A Saviour, art come down to reinstall ;		And justify the ways of God to men.	@
	Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,		Say first — for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,	
	Of tempter and temptation without fear.		Nor the deep tract of Hell — say first what cause	
	But thou, Infernal Serpent! shalt not long		Moved our grand parents, in that happy state,	
	Rule in the clouds. Like an autumnal star,		Favoured of Heaven so highly, to fall off	30
620 F111	Or lightning, thou shalt fall from Heaven, trod down		From their Creator, and transgress his will	
	Under his feet. For proof, ere this thou feel'st		For one restraint, lords of the World besides;	
	Thy wound (yet not thy last and deadliest wound)		Who first seduced them to that foul revolt?	
	By this repulse received, and hold'st in Hell		Th' infernal Serpent; he it was whose guile,	
	No triumph; in all her gates Abaddon rues		Stirred up with envy and revenge, deceived	35
625	Thy bold attempt. Hereafter learn with awe		The mother of mankind, what time his pride	
L1[I]	To dread the Son of God. He, all unarmed,		Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host	L1[I]
B	Shall chase thee, with the terror of his voice,		Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring	B
	From thy demoniac holds, possession foul —		To set himself in glory above his peers,	
	Thee and thy legions; yelling they shall fly,		He trusted to have equalled the Most High,	40
630	And beg to hide them in a herd of swine,		If he opposed, and with ambitious aim	
	Lest he command them down into the Deep,		Against the throne and monarchy of God,	
	Bound, and to torment sent before their time.	8	Raised impious war in Heaven and battle proud,	
	Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both Worlds,		With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power	
	Queller of Satan! On thy glorious work		Hurled headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,	45
635	Now enter, and begin to save Mankind.”		With hideous ruin and combustion, down	
	Thus they the Son of God, our Saviour meek,		To bottomless perdition, there to dwell	F3
Paradise	Sung victor, and, from heavenly feast refreshed,		In adamant chains and penal fire,	S4
Regained	Brought on his way with joy. He, unobserved,		Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.	
4.639 ♦	Home to his mother's house private returned.	8	Nine times the space that measures day and night	1.50
1.1	○ F Man's first disobedience, and the fruit		To mortal men, he, with his horrid crew,	
Paradise	Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste		Lay vanquished, rolling in the fiery gulf,	
Lost	Brought death into the World and all our woe,		Confounded, though immortal. But his doom	
	With loss of Eden, till one greater Man		Reserved him to more wrath; for now the thought	
5	Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,		Both of lost happiness and lasting pain	55
	Sing, Heavenly Muse, that, on the secret top		Torments him: round he throws his baleful eyes,	
	Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire		That witnessed huge affliction and dismay,	
	That shepherd who first taught the chosen seed		Mixed with obdurate pride and steadfast hate.	Milton
	In the beginning how the heavens and earth		At once, as far as Angels ken, he views	Paradise
10	Rose out of Chaos: or, if Sion hill	28	The dismal situation waste and wild.	60 Lost
1.11	Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flowed	152	A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,	1.61
		162		